

# THE DUALITY OF THE BIBLE

OF

THE SCRIPTURAL CHURCH  
AND CHRISTIANITY



[ THE DUALITY OF THE BIBLE  
AND THE LAW OF THOUGHT ]

By

SIDNEY G. TAPP, PH. D.



Class BS680

Book S5T3

Copyright N<sup>o</sup>                     

**COPYRIGHT DEPOSIT**







# The DUALITY of the BIBLE

or

## THE SCRIPTURAL CHURCH AND CHRISTIANITY

*By*

SIDNEY C. TAPP, PH. B.

Author of "The Truth About  
the Bible," "The Sexology of the  
Bible," "Why Jesus was a Man  
and Not a Woman," "The Story  
of Anglo-Saxon Institutions,"  
"The Struggle," Etc.

PUBLISHED BY THE AUTHOR  
KANSAS CITY, MO.

BP 680  
S5T3

COPYRIGHTED 1917  
BY  
SIDNEY C. TAPP  
KANSAS CITY, MISSOURI  
All Rights Reserved.

\$2.00

FEB 10 1917

©Cl. A 455502

no 1.

W. F. A. - 1871-1872 /

To True Christianity, as our Lord taught it and  
his Apostles preached it, this Book is lovingly  
dedicated—The Author.





## PREFACE.

The Author's purpose in writing this Book is to heal the sore that is festering upon human society. The sin of the race is Carnality. The Bible and Christianity is the only remedy for the sins of the race which are filling our insane asylums, hospitals and jails. Christianity in its Purity will solve all the evils of the race; and it will empty the insane asylums, jails and hospitals of the race, if it is taught to the race in its purity, and understood and lived by the race.

The ignorance of the sex, as taught in the Bible and the violation of the laws of the sex as taught in the Bible, has filled the insane asylums, hospitals and prison cells in all ages, and is doing so today. The Author, as a Lawyer, saw this clearly. His experience as a lawyer enabled him to see the evils of the race and their cause.

He studied the Bible from the viewpoint of sex as Moses wrote it, and Jesus taught it, and the Apostles preached it, and he became convinced that Christianity in its purity is the only remedy for the ills of the race. Hence, he has written this Book and his other Books on the Bible.

Moses wrote of sex, the Prophets told of sex, Jesus taught sex and the Apostles preached about sex. The Doctrine of the Bible is that all sin is within the sex, and that Christianity is the overcoming of the sensual in act, thought and consciousness; but the Truth of the Bible as Moses wrote it and Jesus taught it and the Apostles preached it,

has not been given to the race. The race is in ignorance and darkness, as to the Truth of the Bible, and hence, the insane asylums, hospitals and prison cells of the world are filled. Purity will empty the insane asylums, hospitals and jails of the world. The purpose of this Book and my other Books on the Bible is to produce a clean and pure race; and to empty the insane asylums, jails and hospitals of the world, and to produce a stronger race, physically and mentally, and a pure race spiritually. Christianity, in its Purity as the Christ taught it, will do this, and the purpose of this Book and my other Books on the Bible is to educate the race in the truth of the Bible, and to give Christianity to the race in its Purity.

Sincerely,

SIDNEY C. TAPP.

Kansas City, Mo., 1917.

# THE DUALITY OF THE BIBLE

*or The Scriptural Church and Christianity*

---

## THE DUALITY OF THE BIBLE

or

## THE LAW OF THOUGHT.

### CHAPTER I.

On this plane and in this dual state of existence, all thought is dual of nature, spiritual and sensual, or non-sex and sex in consciousness—of the soul and of the sex. Soul thoughts and ideas are of God, who is the Father of spirits, and carnal thoughts and ideas are of the sensual (sex)—the serpent—the Satanic mind.

Soul thoughts and ideas are spiritual and holy, and are life, and flow from God, as the Father of all life. Carnal thoughts and ideas are located in the sensual, the carnal senses and sex organs, and flow from the sex senses and the generative organs, and the lust senses of the brain, and are darkness and death. Spiritual thoughts and ideas are immaterial. Carnal thoughts and ideas are of the material consciousness of the sex senses, and sex brain (generative organs) and lust senses. Spirituality has its origin in the Soul, and is of spiritual sense. Carnality has its origin in the sex brain and lust

senses and in the Satanic mind. This is the dual law of thought and language on this plane of existence.

Spiritual thoughts and ideas are the Truth. Carnal thoughts and ideas are Error. Spiritual thoughts and ideas are Divine worship. Carnal thoughts and ideas are sex worship and idolatry. Spiritual thoughts and ideas are Life, and carnal thoughts and ideas are Death. Truth, Light and Life are of the Soul and flow from God, who in his essence, is the Father of Truth, Light and Life; and error, idolatry, darkness and death originate in and flow from the sex brain (generative organs), and lust senses of the brain, which are Satanic in their nature.

This is the dual creation, and it is recorded in Genesis as the Law of Life and the Law of Death. The spiritual creation is the creation of "God;" and the material creation of male and female is the creation of the "Lord God." The soul creation is of "God," and the creation of the carnal senses, which is male and female, in nature and material, is of the "Lord God." The spiritual creation, which is of "God," is Life, the material creation, which is material and sex—is of the "Lord God" and is Death. "God" created the soul—(the man made in God's image), and the "Lord God" created the serpent—the sex and Satanic mind. This creation of "God" and the "Lord God" (the creation of soul and sex), run through the Bible from Genesis to Revelation.

All that is holy, pure, spiritual, light and life, are non-sensual, non-material and non-sex in thought and consciousness. All that is unholy, impure, darkness, idolatry, sex worship and death is



sensual, material and sex in thought and consciousness.

Man, made in God's "image," was non-sensual and non-sex in thought and consciousness. He was mind, God is Mind and Spirit, and matter cannot be the "image" of and reflect Mind and Spirit. The "image" of God, is God's ideas and thoughts—they are spiritual Entities. They are conscious spiritual beings, and immaterial and non-sensual in nature. Man that God made in his "image" was immaterial and non-sensual in essence, thought and Consciousness; and he thought holy ideas and non-sensual thoughts until "the fall." The man made in "God's image" only had one state of consciousness and one law thought until the "Fall," and that state of consciousness and law of thought was holy and spiritual and of spiritual sense. Not an idea and thought of the carnal and sensual entered man's state of consciousness until after the "Fall." Man made in God's "image" only knew and was only conscious of Good—Spiritual sense. But after the "Fall" man knew "Good and Evil." He was then conscious of both the spiritual and carnal senses, and thought both spiritual and sensual (soul and sex) thoughts and ideas. The "Fall" was in thought, and the thought was sex lust, and the act was the sex act, and death followed as the result.

The man made in God's "image" had failed to have "Dominion" over the "earth," the carnal and sex senses. The sex and sensual of the Adamic and material creation was the "Earth" that man made in God's "image" and was commanded to "refill and subdue." He partook of death when he partook of the sensual and sex in thought and act, and died.

The Adamic creation was, and is, material, sensual and sex in nature; it is the "Earth."

This dual creation is clearly set out in Genesis 1:26 to 28: "And God said, let us make man in our 'image,' and after our likeness." Gen. 1:26. This is the spiritual creation, and is non-sensual and non-sex in nature and character. "And let them have dominion over the fish of the sea and the fowls of the air, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth," Gen. 1:26. This is the Adamic creation and is sensual and sex in nature and thought. "So God created man in his own image," Gen. 1:27. This is the spiritual creation—the man made in God's image, who is non-material and non-sensual—and non-sex in nature and thought. "Male and female created he them," Gen. 1:27. This is the Adamic creation, and is material, sensual and sex in its nature and thought.

In this account here given of creation, in the original, the thought is clear, that there are two records of creation. The first creation that is recorded is spiritual, non-sex and non-sensual. Then the thought of creation closes, and a new idea of creation is expressed, which is material, sensual and sex in its nature and thought. And the line of thought that divides these two creations in character and nature is materiality, sensuality and sex; and this is the dividing line between the material and spiritual worlds, in thought and consciousness. This law runs all through the Bible and all through nature.

All of the material creation is sex and sensual, and the spiritual creation is non-sensual and non-sex in nature and character, "And God blessed

them and God said unto them, be fruitful, multiply and replenish the earth, and subdue it," Gen. 1:28.

The Hebrew word translated "earth" is Adamah, and means the Adam man, with his carnal, sensual and sex nature. The word here translated earth, is not the Hebrew word, *erests*, which means globe or planetary system. It is not the globe or planet that man is told to replenish and subdue, but it is the Adam man, with his sensual and sex nature, that the man made in God's "image" is told to refill, subdue and have dominion over. The "Dominion" here commanded is a spiritual dominion of soul over the sex lust of the "Earthly" and Adamic creation. It is Soul Dominion over material Sense. Spiritual Ideas and thoughts are to overcome carnal and lust ideas and thoughts of the sex of the material and Adamic creation. This command, to have dominion over the "Earth" (the Sex and Carnal Senses) was not given to the lower animal creation. It was not made in God's "image"—but is controlled by the law of sex of the Adamic creation without "Shame."

The lower animal creation has no consciousness of "Sin and Shame" of the sex act, because it is not made in the "image of God." "This is the book of the generations of Adam, in the day that God created man in the likeness of God, made he him." This is the spiritual creation. It is non-sex and non-sensual in its nature. "Male and female created he them and blessed them and called their name Adam in the day when they were created." Gen. 5:1-2. This is the Material creation. It is sensual and sex in its nature. It was made male and female and named Adam, that is, Adamic, or Adamah, which means (Red Earth) or the carnal

man with flesh and blood. Jesus said flesh and blood cannot enter the kingdom of Heaven, and this Adam man, who is sex and sensual and is of flesh and blood, cannot enter the kingdom of Heaven—that is, cannot think spiritual and soul thoughts, but his every thought is lustful and carnal. He is not spirit or soul, and has no consciousness of spiritual sense and soul thoughts. He is not in the “image” of God, and never was in the “image” of God. He is matter and flesh.

The male and female are the Adamic creation taken from dust and unto dust they must return. The male and female were named Adam—that is, the Adamic and material creation is sex, male and female, and the soul and spiritual creation is non-sex. “Then shall the dust return to the earth as it was and the spirit shall return unto God who gave it.” Eccl. 12:7. Here is the dual creation declared. The spirit that shall return unto God who gave it, is the soul, or the man made in God’s “image,” and is non-sensual and non-sex in nature; and the dust that shall return unto the earth as it was is the male and the female of the material creation with their lust, sensual and carnal nature.

“There is therefore, now, no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit, for the law of the spirit of life in Christ Jesus hath made me free from the law of sin and death.” Romans 8:1-2. Here Paul declares the dual creation and a dual law of thought on this plane of existence. The Spiritual creation, he declares, is non-sensual in thought and is life, and the material creation is the lust of the flesh in thoughts and is death.

“There is a spirit in man and the inspiration of



the Almighty, giveth them understanding." Job 32:8. Here Job declares that there is a spirit within the carnal body of man, and it is from God, and non-material and non-sensual. "All flesh shall perish together, and man shall return again unto dust." Job 34:15. Here Job declares that the carnal creation—male and female of the Adamic creation, is made of the dust and shall return to dust. It is non-spiritual and carnal in its nature.

"In the sweat of thy face shall thou eat of bread till thou return unto the ground, for out of it wast thou taken, for dust thou art and unto dust shall return." Gen. 3:19. This Adam man which was taken from the dust, and is told that he shall return to dust is not the "spirit that is within man." This Adam man made of dust is the male and female of the material creation, and they are sensual and lustful in their thought and nature. They are the "Earth" that the "Spirit that is within man" was told to "refill and subdue," that is, the soul of the man made in God's "image" was told to overcome and refill the carnal senses of the Adam man with spiritual sense; "and the spirit within man and the soul of man which was made in God's 'image,'" was told to increase with spiritual sense and in a spiritual understanding and to have "Dominion" over and to "subdue" the carnal and sex nature of the male and the female of the Adamic or material creation. Had the man made in God's "image," who is spirit, fulfilled this command he would have gone out of and have overcome the material body of the male and female of the Adamic creation without material death—and without spiritual death, and this must yet be done for man to

have life. It is the Resurrection—the triumph of soul over the carnal and sex in thought.

The “Fall” was the soul yielding in thought and consciousness to the lust of the male and female senses of the Adamic creation, and as a result, the material body of the male and female of the Adamic creation decays and returns unto “dust;” and the soul that was made in the “image of God” in thought and consciousness, departs from its holy state in thought and consciousness and becomes carnal in thought and consciousness.

The resurrection is the restoration of the soul to the “image of God,” the Father, and in this state the soul will only think spiritual thoughts and be conscious of the spiritual sense. This resurrection is the transition from the material sense of the female and male of the Adamic creation to the consciousness of the spiritual sense, of the spiritual creation. The spiritual body made in the “image of God” is resurrected from the senses and consciousness of the material body. The material body of the male and female of the Adamic creation is the “Earth” from which the man (soul) made in God’s “image” is resurrected, and not the earth of the globe or planetary system.

The soul is restored to spiritual sense and liberated from the carnal senses of the male and female of the Adamic creation. This is life Eternal, and this is the Christian resurrection. The grave (Death) is the material and sex sense of the male and female of the Adamic creation, and the material bodies of the Adamic creation return to dust as the result of sex lust. “They all go to the grave” (Death) as the result of the mind of the serpent. When the soul is restored to the “image” of the

Father, in thought, man is resurrected, (Man made in the image of God is resurrected) from the grave (Death), of the sex and lust senses of the material creation. Death is the effect of lust in thought; and life is the result of overcoming lust in thought.

“And Moses spake unto the people saying, Let the Lord, the God of the spirits of all flesh, set a man over the congregation.” Num. 27:15-16. Moses here recognizes God as the Father of Spirits and differentiates between the spiritual and material creations.

The flesh is male and female and sensual and sex in its nature. “For I will not contend forever, neither will I be always wroth, for the spirit should fail before me, and the souls which I have made.” Isaiah 57:16. Here we see that God is the Father of spirit and of soul. This is the spiritual creation. It is the creation that was made in God’s “image” and is non-material and non-sensual and non-sex.

The Adamic creation was, and is, material, sensual and sex in nature. This dual creation is clearly set out in Genesis and all through the Bible, it is from Genesis to Revelation; the law of Sex, and the law of spirit, and the law of the carnal senses and the law of soul sense is the Law of the Bible. The creations of “God” and of the “Lord God” are all through the Bible. The creation of “God” is spiritual and the creation of the “Lord God” is material and is of the Senses. The law of carnal thoughts and the law of soul thoughts, the law of the sex senses in thought and the law of the spiritual senses in thought, is the Law of thought of the Bible.

“What profit is there in my blood when I go down to the pit? Shall the dust praise thee? Shall



it declare thy truth?" Psalms 29:9. Here the Psalmist declares that the carnal sense of the Adamic creation cannot declare the truth of God, and that only the soul, which is of spiritual sense, can declare the truth of God—for Truth is of spirit and spiritual sense. The carnal in thought cannot become conscious of God, who is spirit. "For he knoweth our frame, he remembereth that we are Dust." 103 Psalms 15. This is the sex and material creation. "Thou hideth thy face, they are troubled; Thou takest away thy breath, they die and return to their dust. Thou sendest forth thy spirit, they are created." 104 Psalms 29-30. Here is the dual creation, all are of the dust and all turn to dust again. "Who knoweth the spirit of man that goeth upward and the spirit of the beast that goeth downward to the earth?" Eccl. 3:20-21. Here is the dual creation again declared. The spirit of man "goeth upward" in thought and "consciousness" as it overcomes the sensual, and the dust of the material creation returns to dust as a result of sensual thoughts. The spirit of man "goeth upward" because it is created in the "image" of God, and the spirit of beast "goeth downward" to the earth because it is not made in the "image" of God, and is controlled in thought and consciousness by the sex lust of the Adamic and material creation.

And God commanded man made in his "image" to be "fruitful," that is, bring forth a spiritual fruition, and increase spiritually and to multiply spiritually, until the carnality and the sensuality of the Adamic creation was "refilled and subdued," that is—until the creation of the mind of God had dominion over the Satanic mind, which is sensual and carnal and sex in its nature. God did not com-



mand the lower animal creation to have "dominion over the earth"—sex lust—the Adamic creation. The lower animal creation, spiritually was not made in "God's image," and, therefore, was not commanded to have "dominion over the earth" (sex lust)—the Adamic creation—the sex and carnal in nature and character. The lower animal creation is controlled by sex, and so is mankind since the "Fall."

Before man fell and as long as he retained the image of God, his thoughts and ideas were entirely spiritual and non-sensual and non-sex in character and nature. His thoughts and ideas were holy and perfect—non-material and non-sensual until man yielded to the carnal in thought. The law of his being and mind was holy and spiritual, and the law of all thought was spiritual and non-sensual in nature and character until man yielded to the mind of the serpent in thought and act. Man never became conscious of the material and sensual and sex in thought and consciousness, and subject to the law of the material, sensual and sex in thought and consciousness and death until after the "Fall." See Gen. 5:1-2.

It was the carnal and sex in thought and consciousness and act that produced spiritual death of the soul and sent the Adam man to dust. And it will take the overcoming of the sensual and sex in thought and consciousness to restore life to the soul and to resurrect the spiritual body from the carnal and sex senses and material body, in thought. Purity is the Resurrection.

This dual creation of "God" which is spiritual and of the "Lord God" which is material and carnal and sex in its nature is represented in Abel and

Cain. Abel is the creation of God. Abel is the spiritual creation. Cain is the Adamic creation, the sex of the material creation. He is of the "Earth" and "Earthy." The original from which the word Abel is derived means soul or spirit, in contra-distinction to matter and the material creation. Abel is soul, and Cain is the lust of the sex of the male and female of the Adamic creation. The original for Cain means "a wanderer," wandering in thought and mind in the land of the carnal and sex senses.

Eve said when she conceived Cain "That she had gotten a man from the Lord." Gen. 4:11. This was the lie of the serpent. It was the lie of the carnal senses, and the mind of the serpent has claimed since the day of Cain that all mortal conception of the Adamic creation is spiritual, and this is the lie of the carnal senses.

There is not anything spiritual in carnal conception, it is of the Satanic mind. Every woman since the "Fall" has claimed through the carnal mind that her carnal conception was of the Lord and Holy, yet her soul has told her that this is the lie of the serpent. "And she again bare his brother Abel." Abel here is the soul, the mind of man made in God's image. Every Cain man, with his carnal senses murders Abel, the soul. "Abel was the keeper of sheep." Sheep here is the emblem of purity. Our Lord often times referred to those who had overcome the carnal senses of the Adamic creation and were pure in heart as "his sheep," and to those who were living for the carnality of the Adamic creation as "goats." The "goat" is a sensual animal, and our Lord used the "sheep" and the "goat" to type purity and sensuality. All of his symbols in his parables type purity and sensuality.

But Cain was a tiller of the "ground." "Ground" here is the "Earth" that the man made in God's "image" was commanded to refill and subdue. The "Ground," as here used, is the carnal senses of the sex lust of the Adamic creation. Cain was a cultivator of the "Ground," that is, he cultivated the sex and carnal senses in thought and consciousness. The Cain within men are today cultivating the "Ground," as in the beginning. Lust is today controlling men as in the beginning. They live for the indulgence of the sex in thought and act, and murder Abel (the soul) and die as the result.

"And in process of time it came to pass that Cain brought of the fruit of the ground an offering unto the Lord." Gen. 4:3. Cain's offering to the Lord was the lust of the flesh—the thoughts and desires of the sex nature of the Adamic creation, and men today are offering the carnal to God in thought as of old. "And Abel he also brought of the offerings of his flock and the fat thereof, and the Lord had respect unto Abel, and to his offerings." The sheep and the flock here, which was Abel's offering, are the emblems of purity and spirituality. Abel's offering was the mind of purity and spiritual thought, and his purity was acceptable unto the Lord. Abel is the soul liberated from the sensual of the Adamic creation. God today will accept the spiritual offerings of the soul, if it will only subdue the lust of the flesh and live with him as the Father of Spirits. "But unto Cain and his offering He had no respect and Cain was very wroth and his countenance fell." Gen. 4:5.

Cain is the carnal mind with its lust and sex nature and God had no respect for the mind of the serpent and the carnal senses. Ever since the "Fall"



the mind of Abel and the mind of Cain has been within every man and woman, and warring against each other. These two minds have been at war in the human race since the serpent entered into the consciousness and thoughts of the race, and they are at war today within every human being.

Before the serpent deceived Eve, Abel—the soul—was free from the thought of Cain, and in the “image of God,” and Cain talked with Abel, his brother, and it came to pass, when they were in the field, that Cain “rose up against Abel, his brother, and slew him.” Gen. 4:8. Cain is ever talking to the soul made in God’s image. He is the sex mind within every man and woman, talking to the soul made in God’s image. The word translated “serpent,” that deceived Eve, means “Babbler” and “master of the tongue.” Tongue means language or the expression of thought, that is, thought in consciousness. The sex lust senses of the Adamic creation is the “Babbler” and the “master of thought” of the carnal creation.

The carnal and sex senses are in every man and woman, sending their carnal and lust messages to the consciousness of the soul, made in the “image” of God, which are spiritual death to the soul. This “Babbler” and “master of the tongue” of the Adamic creation is the Cain within us that is murdering the soul made in “God’s image.”

At Puberty, the Cain within us begins to talk to the Soul. The Serpent—the carnal and sex senses—then begins to “Babble” away and to talk to the consciousness of the soul, creating confusion, vanity, strife, hatred, selfishness and greed in thought and the passion to indulge the carnal and sex act. This “Babbler” is ever at war with God

and all that is Holy. It is the sex senses sending their ideas and images into the consciousness of the Soul as spiritual death.

“And the Lord said unto Cain, where is Abel, thy brother? and he said, I know not, am I my brother’s keeper?” He said: “What hast thou done? The voice of thy brother’s blood crieth unto me from the ground, and now art thou cursed from the earth, which hath opened her mouth to receive thy brother’s blood from thy hand. When thou tillest the ground, it shall henceforth yield unto thee her strength; a fugitive and vagabond shalt thou be in the earth.” Gen. 4:10-11-12. The earth here is the same earth that man made in God’s image was commanded to refill and subdue. It is the carnal senses. It is the thought of the lust mind, and “it is the fugitive and the vagabond of the carnal senses.” Man is “ashamed” of it because it is sin and death. It is at war with all that is holy and with God’s spiritual creation.

“And Cain said unto the Lord, my punishment is greater than I can bear, behold thou hath driven me out this day from the face of the earth and from thy face shall I be hid, and I shall be a fugitive and a vagabond in the earth, and it shall come to pass that every one that findeth me shall slay me.” Gen. 4:13-14. The mind of Cain is the mind of the carnal and sex senses, and this mind is against all that is holy and all that is holy is against it. It is the mind of confusion, selfishness, turmoil, strife and death. This mind of the carnal and sex senses—the Cain within us—produces confusion in the thought and understanding of the race. It creates jealousy, strife and conflict. It produces war between individuals and nations. This mind of the

carnal senses arms nations with navies and armies and leads them on to the destruction of each other. It produces "private diseases" which fill the insane asylums and hospitals of the world. It produces the desire for liquor, drugs, carnal indulgence, lust and crime, which fills the jails and prison cells of the world. It is guilt and all are "ashamed" of it. It unites the male and female of the Adamic creation sexually and they are "ashamed" of the act. It produced "guilt" and "shame" in Adam and Eve, it produces "guilt" and "shame" in the soul to-day, as then. This "guilt" and "shame" in the soul is manifested on the face of the race. This mind of lust, is a "vagabond" in the world of the carnal senses and every man is against it, and all are "ashamed" of it.

The male and female go into secret to indulge the Cain within them. They are "ashamed" of the act. Our Lord lived above this murderer in thought and consciousness and act, and was without "shame," and was "the life." Jesus said, "He did nothing in "secret." "And the Lord set his mark upon Cain, lest any finding him should kill him. And Cain went out from the presence of the Lord, and dwelt in the land of Nod, on the East of Eden. "And Cain knew his wife, and she conceived and bare Enoch. and he builded a city and called the name of the city after the name of his son Enoch." Gen. 4:16-17.

Cain here went forth from the presence of our Lord. The Cain within us is the Carnal senses. It is not of the Soul, in thought and consciousness; only Abel, the soul, which is spirit and made in the image of God, is of the Lord in thought and consciousness. Cain is not in the presence of the Lord



—the carnal senses have no consciousness of God, who is Spirit. The carnal senses, which is the Cain within us, take no cognizance of spiritual sense and of spiritual law and of God. As Cain went out of the presence of the Lord, he left Eden and went into the land of Nod. Nod is the Land of “Wandering”—the carnal senses. Eden is the city of the spiritual senses. It is the land of Soul. It is the state of consciousness of the soul made in God’s “image” before the Fall.

Cain went out of this state of consciousness of the spiritual senses into the carnal senses. This is the “Land of Nod.” The soul in the image of God is Eden, and the carnal senses of the sex nature of the Adamic creation is the Land of Nod. Cain found a carnal mate in the land of Nod, and so does every man and woman who become husband and wife. In the sex act they go in thought into the land of spiritual “Wandering;” Carnality, Nod.

Marriage and the carnal relation of the sexes take place within the land of Nod. It is of the Carnal senses. It is of the sex of the Adamic creation. The soul in the “image of God” remains in Eden, “and neither marries nor is given in marriage;” it is holy in thought. The carnal relation between the sexes is unholy in the sight of God. It is of the Land of Nod, the sex senses—Spiritual death. It is of the carnal and sex senses in thought and consciousness.

All the race, “like sheep,” have “gone astray,” and have gone into the Land of Nod, which is the land of lust and the carnal senses, and through lust and this Land of Nod, the race has been diseased in all ages. In this Land of Nod, which is the land of lust, syphilis, gonorrhea and leprosy

had their origin, and these diseases directly or indirectly are the parents of all diseases. In this Land of Nod, man has indulged the carnal senses until he has become diseased and a degenerate. Sex indulgence burns out the nerve cells of the liver and produces liver trouble. It destroys the kidneys and diseases them and produces kidney trouble. It disarranges and destroys the nerve system of the brain and produces the insane. Self abuse produces the idiot and the imbecile. In the Land of Nod, the ills of the race have their origin. This land of Nod is the state of carnal thought.

Jesus said, "Seek ye first the Kingdom of God and his righteousness, and all these things shall be added unto you." God's righteousness is his holy state of thought. God is non-carnal in thought. He is entirely spiritual in thought. "His righteousness" is his spiritual ideas. For man to seek his righteousness, man must overcome carnality, and become entirely spiritual in thought. As we become non-carnal in thought, we become holy and commune with God through spiritual sense. This is seeking the righteousness of God. Jesus said that upon this rock He would build His church (that is, upon himself, as the Christ) "and the gates of Hell should not prevail against it." Jesus built His church upon Himself as the Christ, and as the Son of the living God. He was the Christ, that is the life, because he overcame carnality and death in thought and consciousness. His church is composed of the souls who become pure and overcome carnality and thereby overcome death. They are the "called out." They are the elect. That is what the Greek word for Church means, "to call out;" that is, these souls have been



called out from carnality and death to spirituality and life. And the gates of hell shall not prevail against them. Hell is the Greek word for Hades, and means "grave" or "death." It is equivalent to the Hebrew word, Sheol, which means "Hell," and the meaning of this word is "darkness, or the mysterious abode and state of the dead." This is a state of consciousness. It is the state of the lost. It is spiritual darkness and death. It is a state of thought. Jesus said, "this state of mental darkness shall not prevail against those who have been called out from Carnality and have overcome lust and have come into the day of spiritual light." This is the church. Jesus said, "As Jonah was in the belly of the fish three days and nights, so must the son of man lie in the ground three days." Mat. 12:29. The word translated, fish or whale, into whose belly Jonah went three days and nights, means "beast." It is symbolic of the thought of the beast that deceived Eve. The beast is symbolic of lust. Jonah had been sent to Ninevah to preach the Gospel. Ninevah was deep in sensuality. Jonah at first declined, and for this he was sent into the belly of the beast. This is symbolic of spiritual death. Our Lord's crucifixion was symbolic of the hatred of the beast, the carnal in thought, and his going into the ground three days and nights was the result of carnality, and so was Jonah going into the belly of the fish the result of carnality. It is symbolic of the sensual. Daniel was saved in the lions' den on account of his purity. The lion types the sensual in thought. He was saved from this thought on account of his innocence. Daniel said, "innocency was found in me." Dan. 6:22. All who are pure in heart are saved from the carnal senses.

and the mouth of the lion. The lion types sensuality. The Hebrew children were saved from harm in the fiery furnace because they were Hebrews, indeed. They had been spiritually circumcized. The flames of the fiery furnace were the same as the flaming sword that turned Adam and Eve out of the garden. They type sensuality, and the carnal in thought. The Christ was in the fiery furnace with the Hebrew children. The Christ within the consciousness of our souls saves them from the carnal flames and thoughts of sensuality. The Christ types the lion of moral courage; the lion of Judah.

The Prodigal Son illustrates this law of soul and of carnality. He left his father's house and went into the far country. The far country into which he went was the land of Nod. It was the carnal senses. "And he wasted his father's substance upon the harlots." We have the prodigal sons around us daily. They have existed in all ages. They are wasting their father's substance upon the harlots. They have departed from the spiritual, and gone into the carnal in thought. They are diseased and insane. They have destroyed both body and mind through lust. Spiritually they are dead. "And Cain knew his wife and she conceived and bare Enoch, and he builded a city, and called the name of the city after the name of his son, Enoch." Enoch is the city of the carnal senses, in thought. Sin is the "City of Clay." It is the city of the sex and lust senses in thought and consciousness. This "City of Clay" is the "Earth" (sex lust senses) that man, made in the image of God, was told to refill and subdue. The city of the soul is Eden, and this city is of spiritual sense and soul thought. There is not a carnal and lust thought in this holy city,

and the soul of man, made in the "image of God," was in this city of spiritual sense and understanding until the mind of the serpent—the carnal thoughts of the sex of the Adamic creation—turned the soul out of Eden. Eden is the city of the New Jerusalem, and when man shall have overcome the carnal senses in thought and consciousness, he shall return into this city of spiritual sense and soul thought.

## CHAPTER II.

Babylon is the city of the carnal senses. The Psalmist defines the city that Cain named after his son, Enoch: "Their inward thought is, that their houses shall continue forever, and their dwelling places to all generations; they call their lands after their own names." Psalms 49:11. Names are the symbols of ideas—the sex and carnal mind gives names to its carnal and lust ideas. The Soul gives names to its spiritual ideas. Spiritual thoughts are cities of spiritual ideas, and carnal thoughts are cities of lust ideas.

All through the Bible the term "City" is used to convey the thought of carnal ideas and spiritual ideas. Jerusalem is the City of the Soul. Babylon is the city of lust. The city of Enoch, that Cain called his son, was the city of lust of the carnal reproduction. It is the city of lust in thought, and in this city murder prevails in consciousness and thought. Babel is the Hebrew for Babylon, and Babylon was the ancient city of carnality and sex lust, and is used in the Bible as the symbol of sensuality and lust, and to type the sex of the Adamic creation. This city of the carnal senses is the city of destruction and death, and from Cain this city of the senses in thought and consciousness had its origin.

Abel did not produce a carnal offspring. He is neither born nor begotten of natural parents. He is a child of God, conceived of the divine mind, and



is the offspring of Spirit and of spiritual sense and of soul thoughts. In this city of Enoch, which is the offspring of Cain, the Adamic creation is conceived and perpetuated. See Gen. 4:17-18. The carnal creation, which is sin and death, owes its perpetuation to the carnal senses of this city; and the Adamic creation was continued and is perpetuated through this city, which is the city of lust thoughts. Cain, in thought, is the father of the Adamic creation. The carnal creation is perpetuated through the law of lust and the belief of pleasure and life within the carnal and sex senses. Eliminate this lie from the consciousness of the race in thought and the Adamic creation would cease and the Kingdom of God would be at hand.

“And Jesus said unto them, if God were your Father, ye would love me, for I proceedeth forth and came from God; neither came I of myself, but he sent me. Why do ye not understand my speech? Even because ye cannot hear my word. Ye are of your father, the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own, for he is a liar and the father of it.” John 8:42-44. The devil here is the same devil that deceived Eve. He is the Serpent, and the Serpent means a “Babbler” and the “Master of the tongue and thoughts.” The devil here is the carnal and sex senses of the Adamic creation, speaking into consciousness and thought of the soul. He is the chief of the fallen angels, who fell. Our Lord says that he “abode not in the truth.” Truth is of spiritual and soul sense. It is holy in thought and consciousness. It is without carnal and sex lust in

nature and thought. God is holy, and God is the truth. God is non-carnal in nature and thought.

When the devil fell, he was cast into carnal consciousness and thought. He was cast out of the presence of God, and this carnal and sex nature of the Adamic creation is his mind manifested in consciousness and thought, and is the adversary—an “enemy” of the soul, made in the “image of God,” in thought. All that is sensual and carnal in thought and consciousness is the mind of fallen spirits. They abode not in the truth; they abode not in the consciousness, mind and thought of God.

All propagation here in this Adamic creation is through the Satanic mind—Cain. It is of the lust of the flesh. The Adamic creation is perpetuated through the belief of pleasure and life in the carnal and sex senses, which is a lie. This mind, who is the father of liars, deceived Eve; he told her she should not die, which was a lie; and our Lord says that “he is the father of liars.” All sex lust is a lie. There is no truth in the carnal and lust senses. They promise life and pleasure and they produce death and sorrow. They afflict the human body with human torture, and the human mind with mental pain. The diseases of both body and mind originate within the carnal and lust senses. They are of the mind of the serpent.

Diseases, mental and physical, originate in sensuality. They are of Cain, who was a murderer in the beginning. The devil, whom our Lord said “abode not in the truth,” is the father of disease and death. The serpent’s mind is his mind. Sensual thoughts are his thoughts. Lust consciousness is his state of consciousness. His mind is of the lust senses of the Adamic creation. This mind has

no truth in it, and is a liar and the father of it. It promised Eve life, and gave her death.

This lust mind of the sex of the Adamic creation was a murderer in the beginning. It is the Cain within every man and woman since the "Fall," and is every moment murdering Abel—the soul in consciousness and thought. By this law of death, this Adamic creation is perpetuated. It is of the carnal and lust senses and is death. After Cain had murdered Abel—after the lust of the flesh had murdered the Soul in the sex act—Adam knew his wife, Eve, again and she bore a son, and called his name "Seth." "For God," said she, "hath appointed me another seed instead of Abel, whom Cain slew." Gen. 4:25.

Here the carnal senses were again deceiving the soul. They lied to the soul. They said that Seth's conception was of God. They had said the same as to the conception of Cain. Both were of the conception of lust. This same Satanic mind is saying to men and women today that carnal conception is spiritual and of God, and is thus deceiving the race and murdering the souls of men and women spiritually.

"Seth" was the "image" of "Adam." Gen. 5:3. He was carnal. In thought, "like begets like," Seth was carnally conceived and was the image of carnality. Adam had produced, and not God. There was born a son to Seth, and he called his name Enoch. Then began men to call upon the Lord. Gen. 4:26. Creation had become carnal. Men had gone away from God into lust, and into the city of sensuality and death in thought, and the souls of the spiritual creation, realizing that they were out



of the presence of God and lost in the consciousness of lust, began to call upon the Lord.

Man, made in the image of God, wandered into the land of the carnal and lust senses, in thought and consciousness. This is a land into which Cain went to get his wife. This was the land of "Nod," and Nod means "Wandering." The race is still wandering around in this land of carnality and lust, mentally blind to God and all that is spiritual, "and are marrying and given in marriage." The race is still "wandering" in this land of the carnal senses, and is eaten up with syphilis and diseased with gonorrhea and all manner of diseases, as the result of the original sin of lust.

The blind, the deaf, the dumb, the diseased, the deformed, the insane and the criminals are everywhere with us as the result of the race "wandering" around in this land of Nod—the land of lust and the carnal senses. The race in all ages has been diseased as the result of "wandering" around in this land of the carnal senses and spiritual death, into which Cain went to get his wife. Our Lord never "wandered" around in this land of the carnal senses—in the land of Nod—into which Cain went to get his wife. Our Savior overcame the land of Nod—the carnal senses in thought and consciousness. He said he had overcome "the Prince of this world" and the "Prince of this world" is the land of Nod, the carnality into which Cain went to get a wife; and our Lord, having overcome carnality completely in thought and consciousness, restored the insane to their right minds, healed the sick and raised the dead. The insane are insane, the diseased are diseased, and all go to the grave because the race is "wandering"



around in the land of Nod—in the land of the carnal senses.

Our Savior having been conceived spiritually, and without the land of Nod—lust—and having lived above the carnal in thought, was not subject to the law of sickness, disease and death of the flesh, hence he healed the sick, restored the insane to their right minds and raised the dead. And if men were pure today the same could be done now. The Apostles and early Christians did it. Spiritual law is above the carnal law in thought; and the spiritual senses are above the carnal senses. Purity knows no disease, insanity and death.

“And Cain knew his wife, and she conceived and bare Enoch and he builded a city and called the name of the city after the name of his son, Enoch.” Gen. 4:7. The city that Cain builded and named after his son, Enoch, was the city of carnal thoughts; it was the state of carnal consciousness. Men today are “wandering” around in the land of Nod, which is the land of the carnal senses, and are begetting mortal and carnal children and building cities—they are building carnal cities of the senses in thought. Through their carnal egotism they think they are perpetuating themselves through the “mud and clay” which composes the body of their carnal offspring; but in a few years the carnal father and the carnal offspring, both return to dust. They are taken from dust and “unto dust they are returned.”

Human governments, commerce and society itself are formed out of the city that Cain builded—they are all the product of the selfishness, greed, vanity and egotism of the sex and carnal mind. The father “wandering” around in the land of Nod,

which is the land of the carnal and sex senses, marries and is "given in marriage," and begets a carnal offspring composed of "mud and clay," and in thought bows down to the image of this "mud and clay" which he calls his child, and struggles and oppresses others, steals and robs, and through all manner of injustice and oppression accumulates wealth and money for this carnal offspring of "mud and clay," and in a few years both father and the carnal offspring composed of "mud and clay" return to dust, and the estate that the father accumulated through injustice and oppression is scattered and wasted and passed into the hands of others, who build cities to their Enochs—their carnal offspring, composed of "mud and clay," out of the cities of the former carnal age.

Thrones and dynasties of Kingdoms and Empires are builded to Enochs and named after Enoch. Each king and emperor "wanders" into the land of Nod and dies spiritually in this land of the carnal senses, and brings forth a carnal offspring composed of "mud and clay" to inherit his throne of earthly power. But the carnal senses soon decay and both the king and prince return unto dust, and other Cains, "wandering" into the land of Nod, die spiritually, in this land of the senses, and bring forth Enochs of "mud and clay" to shatter the thrones of the former kings and their princes, and finally all return unto dust from which they came. For they are all of dust, and are "wandering" in the land of the carnal senses and spiritual death, in thought and consciousness. The spiritual man made in "God's image" and who is non-material, non-sex and non-sensual in nature and thought, does not reside within this city of

Enoch which Cain builded and does not return to dust for he is not dust; he is the child of God, and "the father of spirits is his creator"; and when he shall have overcome the city of Enoch which Cain builded—the city of lust, sensuality, selfishness, greed, vanity, malice and hatred in thought and consciousness, he shall have overcome the "Prince of this world," sex lust—and be within the "City of the living God."

Cain is derived from the Hebrew word which means to "acquire" and a "spear" and an "arrow;" that is, the carnal mind was "acquired" by the "fall," and that this fall was the yielding to carnal thoughts. This state of carnality, man made in God's "image," did not possess originally, but he "acquired" it when he yielded to carnality and "fell," and then this "acquired" carnal state, in thought and consciousness, became a "spear and arrow," piercing and murdering the soul, the carnal thoughts of this "acquired" fallen state of man continually flowed into the soul, producing a state of carnal consciousness which was spiritual death. These carnal thoughts and lust desires have continually flowed into the consciousness of the soul as spiritual death since man yielded to carnality in thought and act, and "fell."

Man made in the image of God, was God's "moral image," and "moral image" means the spiritual image of God, that is, free from carnality and sex lust in thought and consciousness. Man "acquired" this fallen state by yielding to the lust senses in thought.

Since the "fall" the thought of the lust senses flowing into the consciousness of the soul has continually pierced the soul with the arrow of spiritual



death. This is the city that Cain builded, and this is the land of Nod into which he wandered.

Men are today building cities within the carnal senses and wandering into this land of the lust senses in thought and consciousness and dying spiritually as the result. The city of confusion in thought in this land of the carnal senses is producing all the war and strife of the human race. While I write, practically all Europe is involved in the greatest war of all history. Millions have been slaughtered within the last two years on that Continent. Blood has flowed like Rivers of water. Human suffering and woe have been beyond conception. All because man in the age in which I live is "wandering" in the land of Nod, into which Cain went to get his wife—the race is "wandering" in the land of the carnal senses, in thought. It is a carnal age. The mind of the serpent prevails in thought. It is an age of greed, avarice, selfishness, vanity, hatred, murder and death, in thought. The sex mind prevails in the consciousness of the race.

The Satanic mind is controlling the thought and consciousness of the race. The race, as a race, is within the city that Cain builded in consciousness and thought—and has been since the serpent—the sex mind, deceived the first woman, and the first man. And the race will continue to "wander" in this land of Nod—the land of the carnal senses, and murder, slaughter and kill each other, until the sex mind—the land of Nod, into which Cain wandered, is overcome in thought and consciousness.

Selfishness, avarice, greed, vanity, strife, hatred, malice and death will control the action and thought of the race until man comes out of



the land of Nod, into which Cain "wandered" in thought and consciousness. Our Lord said, "These things must be," wars will continue, economic and industrial strife will still remain with the race and oppression and injustice will be a part of our system of living until the race comes out of the land of Nod—the carnal senses in thought into which Cain went. When the race shall have returned from this land of the carnal senses, and this city of the lust senses which Cain builded in thought and consciousness, the race will cease to slaughter and murder each other. When the race returns into the city of Abel, and into the land of the spiritual senses in thought and consciousness, there will be no more strife, no more oppression and no more injustice and war.

In the city of Abel, which is the city of the spiritual senses and soul thoughts, brotherly love prevails and the language of that city is spiritual. Every note of music in that city is attuned by angelic thoughts and every vibration is of spiritual sense. It is the city and land of peace. In the city of Cain in thought and the city of Abel in thought, is the law of all thoughts and of all language. The entymology of all languages, of all ages and of all races is founded upon the law of thought within these two cities—the law of spirit and the law of the carnal senses.

All thoughts are either spiritual or carnal, and language is the symbol of thought, and all languages are therefore founded on the law of spiritual thoughts and the law of carnal thoughts.

The city of Abel is the city of the spiritual senses. It is the city of God. In this city of thought, only spiritual ideas are conceived in con-

sciousness—only spiritual thoughts come into consciousness. All thoughts flow from God in the city of Abel—there is nothing carnal in thought and consciousness in this city, and this is the city of God.

In the city of Cain the carnal and lust senses prevail in thought. There is not a spiritual thought conceived in consciousness in the city of Cain. All thought is of the carnal and lust senses in the land of Nod into which Cain went to get him a wife. And in this land they are marrying and are “given in marriage.” Vanity, strife, selfishness, confusion, murder and death prevail in this city of carnality. In this city jealousy is the law of thought. There is nothing holy in thought and consciousness within this city of the carnal senses. Within this city of the carnal senses they marry and are “given in marriage,” conceive mortality and propagate mortal offspring of “mud and clay,” and all return to dust.

In the city of Abel there is not a carnal thought that prevails in consciousness. All is spiritual in thought and they neither “marry nor are given in marriage”—there is nothing sensual in thought in this city, and all within this city are the children of God. Seth was brought forth in the place of Abel; “And Adam knew his wife again and she bare a son, and called his name Seth: For God, said she, hath appointed me another seed instead of Abel whom Cain slew. And to Seth, to him also there was born a son; and he called his name Enos: then began men to call upon the name of the Lord.” Gen. 4:25-26.

Seth means “seed” or “germ.” He is the “seed” of the carnal man by which the physical man is

propagated. "The children of Seth," is equivalent to, and means the "children of mankind," that is, carnal propagation. Seth means "noise" and "tumultuous." The carnal senses are full of noise and confusion. All the strife and turmoil of this life are within the sex mind and the sex brain and the physical man is propagated through the desires of the sex mind and in gratification of the sex brain. This is "Seth," that was brought forth through carnality in the place of Abel, the Soul. Cain and Seth, in thought, propagate the physical man. "And Adam lived an hundred and thirty years, and begat a son in his own likeness, after his image, and called his name Seth." Adam's "image" was carnal. His ideas were carnal and he begat Seth through carnality, and thus Seth was in his image.

It is the law of nature that "like begets like." That which is in the consciousness of the carnal parents when begetting and conception takes place, will be within the consciousness and mind of the offspring. The more carnal the parents are, the more carnal the offspring will be. The converse is likewise true. The more spiritual the parents are, the more spiritual the offspring will be.

The blessed Virgin, the Mother of our Lord, overcame carnality and sex lust absolutely and completely and therefore conceived our Lord spiritually. She overcame carnality completely and could converse, and did converse with angels who were holy and spiritual. She had to be in this spiritual state of mind and thought before she could conceive spiritually. The fact that she had overcome the carnal senses in thought and consciousness enabled her to commune spiritually with



angels who were spiritual beings, and in this state of holiness she conceived our Lord spiritually. It is the law of nature that that which is in the mind of the parents will determine the mind of the offspring.

The author knew of a case of a girl who was very much in love with a young man; we say love, but we mean thereby sexually attracted to him. There is no love of the senses, all love is of the Soul, and spiritual. This girl and young man were very much attracted to each other sexually. He was poor and the girl's parents objected to her marrying him, because he was poor. There was another man of wealth who lusted for this young woman. He desired her body for the purpose of gratifying his lust. For this is what marriage is. The parents made the girl marry the man of wealth. She had no opportunity of being with the poor young man who she desired sexually and wanted to marry. They were separated and it was a physical impossibility for him to know her sexually and to be the father of her child, because he was separated from her and the distance was such a length that they had no way of communicating with each other, yet her first child, who was a girl, when she grew up to womanhood was the very "image and likeness" of the man whom the mother wanted to marry. The mother afterwards admitted, when she was having sex relations with her husband that she had the man whom she first loved in her mind and thoughts, that his image was before her mentally when her child was conceived. Hence the child was the image of the man who was not her father. Jacob practised this same law of sex psychology upon his father-in-law. He changed



the color that was to be in the presence of the female sheep when they conceived. In this way he determined the color of the lambs.

We knew of a case where an innocent and ignorant husband, and most all of the human race are ignorant as to what the Bible means, came home to his wife, who was some several months with child. He had an artificial snake in his pocket and thought he would play a joke upon his wife and have some fun out of her. He threw the artificial snake, which looked natural, into his wife's lap; she saw it, jumped and screamed, and threw it upon the floor. When the child was born, it was natural from its waist up to its head. From the waist down it looked like a snake. The child died.

This is the law of sex psychology. The image in the mind of the parents when the child is being begotten and conceived, and the image in the mind of the mother while carrying the child, determines the mind and the thought and character of the child. All are conceived in lust and therefore all come under the law of death. Lust is in the consciousness, and the mental image of all propagation here in the flesh, and hence all are under the law of sin, lust and death. The nearer the parents overcome lust and the sensual, while begetting the child, the less the child will have to overcome. The Blessed Virgin, who conceived our Lord, overcame lust completely, and hence her conception was a perfect spiritual conception.

### CHAPTER III.

Seth was after the "image of Adam" because Adam was the carnal man. Cain and Seth type death and carnality by which and through which the human race is propagated and as the result all that is human and material "return to dust." "Idol" means "Image." Idolatry is the carnal images, or ideas, of the lust senses in the mind. Idolatry is the carnal ideas of the sex mind. This is the land of Nod into which Cain went in thought and consciousness when he got him a wife. Every man goes into this land of Nod, that is, into the land of the carnal and sex senses, when he gets him a wife.

Every man and woman go into a state of idolatry in thought and consciousness when they beget and conceive a human child. They have the carnal ideas and images of the sex lust senses and sex brain in thought while they are co-habiting and during the sex relations, and this mental image of the sex senses is imparted to the mind of their offspring. John said, "Little children, keep yourselves free from idolatry." The Jews were continually and continuously going into a state of idolatry, that is, into a state of carnality, and the Prophets cried out against this state of lust and sensuality. Jesus preached against it, and so did the Apostles. The making of physical things to represent the ideas of these carnal images was what the Jews did. They erected "bulls" and other statues representing carnal and lustful beasts. The

figures of these beasts represented the carnal ideas and carnal thoughts within their sex brain and carnal minds. The religions of all the pagan ages were based on this law of carnality.

Every human child is conceived in a state of idolatry. The sex of all animal life is permeated with this law of sensual ideas and thoughts. It is the city that Cain built, and men and women are building the same city today. They have builded the same city in all ages. It is the city of carnal thoughts. This city is within the sex brain—that is, the city of carnal thought is located within the generative organs and the lust senses of the brain. Men and women who dwell in this city of carnal thought bring forth their mortal offspring and pay homage to their offspring, and weep when the offspring returns to dust.

The cemeteries of the ages were builded within the city of idolatry in thought, within the city of the carnal and sex brain. When this city shall have been overcome in thought, there will be no more human propogation and the kingdom of Heaven will be at hand. That is what our Lord prayed for in the Lord's prayer, when he said, "Thy kingdom come, thy will be done, on earth as it is in Heaven." The will of the Father is spiritual, his thoughts and ideas are spiritual thoughts and ideas, for His will to be done, the city of idolatry, which is sex lust in thought, must be overcome.

His will can never be done until the last thought and idea of carnality and sex lust are eliminated from the mind and consciousness. When the serpent—the dragon—is completely cast out of consciousness, the will of the Father shall have been done. When the last thought, idea and desire



of the sex brain and mind are cast out from the consciousness of the soul, then the will of the Father shall have been done. "Thy will be done on earth as it is in Heaven." The "earth" here is the same "earth" that man was told to have "dominion" over, and to "subdue." The "earth" is the carnal and lust senses of the sex brain.

When the sensual shall have been cast out of consciousness, the Father's kingdom will come, and His will will be done on "Earth as it is in Heaven," and His kingdom shall have been realized in thought and consciousness. When this state of spiritual understanding shall have been reached there will not be a lust thought and idea in the consciousness of the soul. When the mind of the dragon shall have been cast out of consciousness, the kingdom of God will be at hand. When the last idea and thought of the sex brain and the lust senses shall have been cast out of consciousness there will be no more death, and the serpent, the "babbler," through the lust senses of the brain and the generative organs shall cease to speak to the soul, and carnal thoughts and ideas shall cease to be things in the consciousness of the soul; and the soul, the man in "God's image," shall come into the complete consciousness of God. the Father, who is Spirit, and commune with him through spiritual sense.

If the Lord's prayer could be realized here and now, there would be no more sex copulation between sexes—and the Satanic Kingdom would end, and the Kingdom of God would be at hand. If the mind of the serpent were overcome in thought by the race. humanity as a race would come into the Christ mind and all ages of sin and death would



cease; for there would be no cities of Cain—no more mortal propogation; but as men are lustful, they will continue to gratify the lust of the flesh until this age of sin destroys itself.

“But woe unto the woman that is with child in that day,” said our Lord. For this city of the carnal senses into which Cain went, to get his wife, must be overcome for the soul to know God. God told Abraham that if there were ten righteous people in Sodom that He would save Sodom—that He would not burn Sodom up. “Righteousness” is derived from the Greek word which means to think right, that is, to think spiritual thoughts and ideas, and not carnal thoughts and ideas. Carnal thoughts and ideas are heresy. Heresy comes from the two Greek words meaning to think error, that is, the thoughts of the carnal and sex brain.

The “righteous” are those who think only spiritual ideas and thoughts. The cities of Sodom and Gomorrah are within the sex brain and sex senses of every man and woman. Every man and woman after the age of puberty are carrying the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah around with them within their generative organs and their lust senses of the brain. These are the cities of idolatry. These are the cities in which carnal thoughts, ideas and images which are contrary to God’s will and His spiritual laws, are conceived. Carnal ideas must first be conceived in the mind of the sex brain before material things can be made to represent them to the physical senses.

The more sensual a race is, the more cities of Sodom and Gomorrah they build. The more sensual an age is, the more cities of Sodom and Gomorrah it builds. The age in which I write is

a sensual age. Sodom and Gomorah are everywhere. The cities of sensuality have builded high their fortifications. Kansas City, Missouri, where I now reside, is a city of nearly half a million people. I have resided here during the six years I have been writing my books on the Bible. I have walked her streets hungry and have gone from place to place to find a stenographer in order to get my ideas on paper. Money was everywhere, but I could get no financial aid from any source. She had millions to spend in the gratification of the senses. Her vaults were builded high with gold and silver to be expended on the pleasure of the senses and lust, but not a dollar could I secure to get my ideas on paper, and to the world to teach men the way of truth and to lead them away from lust and death unto life; and from the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah to the City of the New Jerusalem—from the sensual to the spiritual. Her churches are many and her ministers plentiful, and fortunes are spent in maintaining them. Her people go to their churches Sunday and return as ignorant as they went as to what the Bible is about, and as to what Sin is and what Salvation is.

If the clergy were to tell the people what the Bible was about they would soon have no churches, no congregation and no pay, for the people are too sensual to receive the truth—the gospel as Jesus preached it, which is the giving up of sensuality in thought and act, for spirituality—the overcoming of the “beast.” What is true in Kansas City today is true throughout the world; it is a carnal age, hence, all the world is in confusion, mental and physical.

Confusion, destruction and death are the law

of thought of the sex brain—the serpent. This is the mind of Cain and Seth. It is the mind that produced original death. This mind was a “liar” in the beginning and “abode not in the truth,” saith our Lord. It is the mind by which Eve brought forth Cain and Seth and said she had conceived of our Lord. She had conceived Cain and Seth in the gratification of her sex and lust desires—the serpent’s mind and not of the spiritual mind—and this carnal mind was here, a “liar” to the soul.

Women today are gratifying the lust of the flesh and claiming that it is of God, and have in all ages since Eve. The serpent is a “liar” and damns the soul. Eve said her carnal conception was of God. This was the “lie” of the carnal senses and the mind of the serpent. It was not of God. It was not spiritual—but carnal. It was not of God but of Satan. All carnal conception is of Satan and sex lust. Eve means the “mother of all the earth,” that is, the mother of all that is carnal. “Earth” here means the carnal creation. Every material woman is an Eve and every material man is an Adam, and their carnal conceptions are not of God—but of Satan, and hence, man must be born again (of the spirit) to see God.

This Cain mind goes into the land of the senses, which is the land of Nod, marries and is “given in marriage,” begets and conceives the carnal man in its own image, which is the image of the Adamic creation, and is “Seth,” that is, the image of the lust of the flesh.

The Cain mind in bringing forth the image of Adam, murders the soul—Abel. Every mother with her baby in her arms has builded her carnal city



and this city of carnality she has named Enoch, that is, in carnal thought, she has her idol. She has named it after the carnality of her own lust, as Cain did in the beginning. The arms of the mothers of the earth are filled with babies, the offspring of the Cain mind. These mothers have gone into the land of Nod, and in this land of the lust senses have builded their cities of carnality in the gratification of the lust of the flesh, and are carrying the results of their thoughts physically around in their arms.

This is the curse that God pronounced upon the "earth"—the "earth" that God cursed was the "earth" that man was told to "subdue and have dominion over." The "earth" is the carnal senses, and when man failed to refill and have "dominion" over the "earth," and to "subdue" the lust of the flesh, God "cursed" the "earth." As the result of that curse, the race is eaten up with syphilis disease mentally and physically. The curse of the race had its origin in lust. This lust mind, which is the mind of Cain, fills the arms of mothers of the human race with babies, then when they grow up to physical manhood the "Seth" mind of "noise and tumult" creates confusion in thought and produces war, disease and pestilence, and mows them down and sends them to the grave. The carnal mind produces them and then destroys them.

While I write all Europe is confusion, the Cain and Seth mind is cutting down the cities that the mothers carried in their arms a few years ago. A few years ago the babies that the mothers carried in their arms are being destroyed today as physical men by war. Carnality conceived them as mortal beings and carnality is destroying them as mortal



beings. But the spirit is neither conceived by the natural parent nor destroyed by physical offspring. It is spiritually conceived and of God. God is its father, and when the Carnal creation shall have been overcome in consciousness and thought, the Spirit will come into the consciousness of its fatherhood and the kingdom of God.

“And it came to pass, when men began to multiply on the face of the earth, and daughters were born unto them, that the sons of God saw the daughters of men that they were fair; and they took them wives of all which they chose. And the Lord said, My spirit shall not always strive with man, for that he also is flesh: yet his days shall be an hundred and twenty years. There were giants in the earth in those days; and also after that, when the sons of God came in unto the daughters of men, and they bare children to them, the same became mighty men which were of old, men of renown. And God saw that the wickedness of man was great in the earth, and that every imagination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually. And it repented the Lord that he had made man on the earth, and it grieved him at his heart.” Genesis 6, 1-6. It was the Cain mind that caused man to begin to “multiply” on the earth. The lust of the flesh had carried man into the land of Nod. He had gone into the carnal senses in thought, “The sons of God saw the daughters of men that they were fair.” This was the law of thought of the spiritual man who was made in God’s image yielding to the gratifications of the lust of the flesh. The desire to gratify the sex act took man, whom God made in his image, out of Paradise, which was his spiritual state, into the

land of Nod, which was the land of the carnal senses, and spiritual death. "And they took them wives, all of which they chose." Man whom God made in his image and who was spiritual, had to leave his state of spiritual truth in thought and consciousness before he went into the land of Nod, and of the carnal senses, to take a wife.

But when man left Paradise and his state of spiritual truth in thought and consciousness, he yielded to the desire to gratify the carnal senses by committing the sex act, and to gratify this desire produced the mating of the sexes, and the desire to gratify the passion of the senses through the sex act has produced all the cities which Cain has builded—all the carnal offspring of the race.

"And God saw that the wickedness of man was great in the earth, and that every imagination of the thought of his heart was only evil continually." The carnal imaginations are located in the sex mind and the sex brain. These carnal imaginations are the images of the lust of the flesh. They are idolatry. All idolatry is located in the sex brain and the lust senses. Carnal images and lust desires flow from the sex brain, and man bows down to these images in thought and consciousness, and goes away from God into the land of Nod and spiritual death.

"Wickedness" is carnality. It is the ideas and thoughts which flow from the sex brain. "Wickedness" is the evil that Adam and Eve came into the consciousness of when they indulged the sex act. All "wickedness" flows from the sex brain. Evil thoughts are carnal thoughts, and carnal thoughts are "wickedness." Carnal ideas are the images and ideas of the sex brain, and these carnal

ideas and images are spiritual death to the soul, hence the Lord said, "My spirit shall not always strive with man." If man would have the spirit of God he must overcome the carnal and sensual in thought. If man would have the spiritual ideas and thoughts of the divine mind within the consciousness of soul, he must overcome the images and ideas of the sex brain and lust desires within the consciousness of the soul.

Man cannot entertain within the consciousness of the soul the spiritual ideas and thoughts of the divine mind and the carnal ideas and thoughts of the lust of the flesh at one and the same time. Hence, our Lord said, "You cannot serve God and mammon." God is spirit and mammon is the lust of the flesh. All material wealth, government and industries of human societies are builded on mammon, that is, the thoughts and ambition of the sex brain. Our Lord said, "You cannot serve the lust of the flesh and God at one and the same time." To serve God means that you should be holy in thought, and to serve mammon means that you must be carnal and lustful in thought. One is life and the other is death.

When every thought of carnality and lust and idea and image of the sex brain are excluded from the consciousness of the soul, man is in the image of God. This is the atonement—the at-one-ment with God. When the soul is filled with the ideas and images and thoughts of carnality, it is separated from God in consciousness and is in the land of Nod, and is spiritually dead. Hence, our Lord said, "The children of this world marry and are given in marriage: but they which shall be accounted worthy, to obtain that world, and the resur-



rection from the dead, neither marry, nor are given in marriage: neither can they die any more: for they are equal unto the Angels; and are the children of God, being the children of the resurrection." Luke 20:34-36.

The children of this world is the soul in its fallen state going in thought and consciousness into the land of Nod, and yielding to the gratification of the lust sense. The children of this world in thought and consciousness are all within the land of Nod. The children of this world are "wandering" around, lost in consciousness and thought of lust, and "bowing down" in thought and consciousness to the ideas and images that flow from the sex brain. They all are within the Cain mind in thought and are marrying and are "given in marriage" and dying spiritually. The Cain mind is a murderer, and all who are within the land of Nod in thought and who are living for the Cain mind are spiritually dead.

The children of "that world" are those who have returned in thought and consciousness from the land of Nod to the land of Eden. They have returned from the land of the carnal senses to the land of the spiritual senses. "Resurrection" means a restoration to life. All who are in the land of Nod are dead. All who are in Eden are alive. Those who have returned to Eden have overcome the Cain mind and every thought and idea of lust and sensuality.

All who overcome the ideas, images and thoughts of the sex brain in consciousness have overcome death. They have been resurrected. They have new ideas and new thoughts and these ideas and thoughts are spiritual and this is the Gospel.



Gospel means "good news," and news means "new ideas." All who have overcome the old carnal mind of Cain in the land of Nod, and have returned to Eden, have new ideas, and these new ideas are spiritual, and these spiritual ideas are new and good; they are the Gospel. All who have obtained the Gospel have overcome sensuality, and "they neither marry nor are given in marriage."

A minister of the Gospel is a man who has overcome sensual ideas and thoughts of the Cain mind and has returned to Eden, and has only spiritual ideas and thoughts in the consciousness of his soul. He cannot be a minister of that which he does not possess, and he does not possess the Gospel until he overcomes the ideas, carnal thoughts and images of the sex brain within the consciousness of the soul. When he overcomes the images, desires and thoughts of the sex brain within the consciousness of the soul, then he has the new ideas of the divine mind and these ideas are spiritual. Then he can minister these spiritual ideas to others.

A man who is a father cannot be a minister of the Gospel until he overcomes the sensual that caused him to be a father. The man that occupies the same bedchamber with his wife on Saturday night cannot preach the Gospel on Sunday. A minister of the Gospel must live above marriage and giving in marriage in thought and consciousness. A man who is marrying and giving in marriage and living in the carnal senses of the land of Nod in thought and consciousness cannot be a minister of the Gospel. He is a "false prophet." He is a "wolf in sheep's clothing." These are the "false prophets" of which the Master spoke.

A minister of the Gospel should be so pure in

thought as not to appeal to the opposite sex, sexually. The Master at thirty years of age, when he was anointed by the holy spirit, overcame the sensual completely, then he became the Christ—he was thirty. At twelve years of age he said to his mother in the temple, “Knowest thou not that I must be about my father’s business.” He had then come into puberty. The thoughts and ideas of the sex brain had begun to unfold into his consciousness. The ideas and images of the lust senses had begun to unfold into consciousness. He had to be about his father’s business to overcome these images of the beast in thought and consciousness.

## CHAPTER IV.

At thirty years of age, the male comes into maturity of his sex forces. At thirty years of age the male is stronger sexually than ever before, if he is a normal man. Jesus was a normal man, sexed as normal men are sexed. He was about his father's business from twelve until thirty and undergoing all the temptations of the serpent's mind. The ideas and images of the sex brain made every effort to penetrate the consciousness of the thought of his pure soul. At thirty years of age he overcame the mind of the serpent and triumphed over the Cain nature within him, and the Holy spirit came upon him, and through the power of the holy spirit, his pure soul overcame every thought, idea and image of the sex brain and mind of the serpent. He became the essence of purity in thought. He became the Christ, that is, the "anointed," which means "the life of God," or "God's life." He was "the life" of the father because He overcame death. He was purity because he had overcome the sensual, in his consciousness. There was not a carnal thought or desire in his pure soul. The ideas and thoughts of his pure soul were spiritual and holy, and this made him the Gospel—that is, the new ideas and the holy mind of the Father.

He was the "Word of God," because he in thought and consciousness was the mind of God. Words are the symbols of thoughts. Word is the symbol of a thought. Speech is the symbol of

ideas. In thought and consciousness he thought the ideas of his father and these ideas within the consciousness of his soul were holy and spiritual, hence he was the "Word" because he was the essence in thought of the Father's mind—the essence of purity itself, and his ministers to be the ministers of the Gospel must likewise be pure. They must live above the carnal and lust in desire and thought. A minister of the Gospel is one who has overcome every carnal desire as did the Master.

Those who have overcome the "Prince of this world" in thought and consciousness are Christians. All who have overcome the ideas, and images and thoughts of the sex brain in thought and consciousness are Christians, and they "neither marry nor are given in marriage," and "neither do they die any more." They have been resurrected to life and have overcome death.

This is the reason the early Christians did not marry and did not propagate. They understood the teachings of their Master. And for teaching the truth as he taught it, they were crucified, and burned at the stake. For teaching the truth as the Master taught it, they were scattered here and there, in little bands and companies, and worshipped in caves, cellars and the catacombs at Rome and wherever they could meet in secret.

"The prince of this world," which is the lust of the flesh, was ever seeking their blood. I can understand why there was so little written about our Master. I can thoroughly appreciate the nature of the Gospels, and the Acts and Epistles of the New Testament and the Revelation of St. John. These saints were writing for the humble saints, who were scattered here and there and fleeing.



from the persecution of the "Prince of this world."

A man who would preach the truth today as the saints of the early churches preached it, would be persecuted as they were persecuted. He could not get a hearing from the carnal minded world bowed down to the image and ideas of the beast in thought. They would kill a Christian today as then. The Author has gone hungry in an effort to right the truths that Jesus preached. He has suffered ostracism for them and borne ridicule for them, while millions were being squandered on sensuality and wealth, he could not even get the money to pay the printer's bill to have his books printed. He is now heavily in debt for this purpose. He couldn't get a hearing in the press. The idea was ostracised by the daily papers. They are supported by the sensual of the race, as are all commercial and industrial enterprises. The social order of society is founded on the sensuality of today, as it was when Jesus lived.

Jesus said, "Now shall the prince of this world be cast out." John 12:31. "The prince of this world" is the Satanic mind which says to the soul that there is pleasure in the senses of the orgasm of the sex act. When this thought is cast out of the belief and consciousness of the soul, the "prince of this world" is cast out, and the soul becomes a Christian. "The prince of this world" is cast out of the thought and consciousness of Christians. "The prince of this world," which is the thought of the orgasm of the sex act within the consciousness of the soul has diseased the race and filled the insane asylums. The orgasm of the sex act destroys the nerve system and the cells of the brain. It produces the insane and the diseased.

When the belief in the pleasure of the orgasm of the sex act is overcome the race will be pure, and non-diseased and non-insane. This thought must be overcome in consciousness for the race to be pure and to overcome insanity and disease. As the soul overcomes this thought and the senses in consciousness, the soul overcomes evil and becomes holy and can commune with God. The holy soul sees God face to face through spiritual sense. It is only the carnal senses and the belief in the pleasure of the orgasm of the sex act that prevents the soul from seeing God with spiritual sense and being conscious of God and his presence. The holy soul is as conscious of God through spiritual sense as the "Prince of this world" is conscious of matter and the carnal man through material sense. The carnal man becomes conscious of the material world through the material senses. The soul becomes conscious of God through soul and spiritual sense. But the "Prince of this world" must be cast out of consciousness for the soul to be conscious of God through the law of spiritual sense. The Patriarchs of old by overcoming the "Prince of this world" and the carnal senses communed with God, face to face, through the spiritual senses of the soul.

Jesus said, "What does it profit a man if he gain the whole world and lose his soul, or what will a man give in exchange for his soul." "The whole world" is the orgasm of the sex act. All things carnal move, live and have their being in this thought. When this thought is overcome the Kingdom of Heaven will be at hand. To live for this thought is to surrender up the soul in thought. It is to exchange the soul for the senses. It is to exchange death for life.

“Orthodoxy” means “righteousness,” that is right thoughts, and correct thinking. Correct thinking is soul thoughts. It is of spiritual sense. Heresy comes from two Greek words meaning to think error. Heresy is carnal thoughts. It originates in the sex brain. Heresy is the thought of the orgasm of the sex act. All the evils of the race originate in this thought. The heretic lives for the carnal senses. The orthodox man lives for the soul senses. When man exchanges the spiritual for the carnal, he is exchanging life for death. He gains the pleasures of the senses but dies spiritually as the result.

The author has had to tramp from place to place and dictate his ideas as he could find a stenographer here and there to take them. This accounts for the irregularity of his writing. He could not get the money to employ a stenographer regularly to carry on his work, and he could not write with his hand, so as to write a book that way, owing to an injured spine from the result of five operations. Our efforts to get the ideas of the Truth of the Bible to the world has given us the opportunity to understand how the Bible was written, and why the saints were persecuted. To believe the Bible, you must believe that sin is sensuality and lust. To accept the Bible, you must accept the truth that Christianity is the overcoming of sensuality and lust. The carnal minded world will not accept this truth, hence, it will not accept the truth of the Bible, nor the truth of Christianity. It is pagan in thought, that is, carnal in thought.

“And the Lord said. I will destroy man whom I have created on the face of the earth.” Gen. 6:7.



"But Noah found grace in the eyes of the Lord." God sent the flood and destroyed the race on account of lust and sensuality. Jesus said that "They were eating, drinking and marrying and giving in marriage until God sent the flood and destroyed them all." The race was destroyed by the flood as the result of the race wandering in the Land of Nod, and marrying and giving in marriage and indulging in lust and sensuality. This was the "Wickedness" that was on the face of the earth. Carnality and lust prevailed in the thought and consciousness of the race, "And God sent the flood and destroyed them all." You cannot read the book of Genesis from the beginning until the flood, intelligently, and spiritually, without discerning the cause of the flood.

The race grew "weaker and wiser." It grew "Weaker" as it yielded to carnality, and "Wiser" as it yielded to the lust senses of the flesh. The longevity of human life was rapidly decreased. Originally man lived to be over nine hundred years of age, and was gradually reduced down to about a hundred years before the flood. Whether these years were our years or not is immaterial. It is not material whether or not the longevity of a year was the same as the longevity of a year now.

The fact is that the longevity of human life was rapidly decreased as the result of sensuality. And in our present day, it has been reduced to the present short period of human life, as the result of lust. The serpent's mind destroys both body and mind and murders the soul spiritually. The diseases and ills of the race have their origin in sensuality.

"The daughters of men looked fair to the sons



of God," and they married and were "given in marriage," and every "imagination" of "their heart was evil," and "God sent the flood and destroyed them all," "But Noah found grace in the eyes of the Lord." "Grace" means the gift of God, and this gift of God is life, and we have this life of the father, as we overcome the images, ideas and thoughts of the sex brain within the consciousness of the soul. It was a sensual age when God sent the flood. It was a diseased age, it was a wicked age.

The "imagination" and ideas and thoughts of the sex brain of the race were within the consciousness of the souls. They were living for sensuality. They were in the land of Nod, indulging lust and the sensual. "Every imagination" of their hearts were sensual in thought. Noah, in this age of sensuality "Found grace in the eyes of the Lord." The "Eyes of the Lord" are not material eyes. The Father of spirits does not see with the senses of the material eye. His eye is spiritual, and is everywhere present. His eye is mental, it is mind. It is thought, and its vision is holy. The man he created in his image is spiritual and he can see God, the Father, with the spiritual eye of the mind, if he will only overcome the carnal ideas of the senses; and God, the Father, beholds him as the spiritual being, whom he made in his spiritual image with an eye divine. He beheld Noah with this spiritual vision, for Noah had overcome the veil of the carnal senses. He was "Righteous," that is, he thought spiritual thoughts and not carnal thoughts. He conceived spiritual ideas, and not carnal ideas within the consciousness of his soul.

Noah had overcome the ideas, thoughts and

images of the sex brain within the consciousness of his soul, and God beheld him, with His holy vision and spiritual eye. Thus God commanded Noah to make the Ark and prepare for the flood. Water is the emblem of purity. Hence, God destroyed the earth with water. All the race was impure. All impurity is within the sex brain. The impurities of the body have their origin within the sex brain.

The virile have to bathe much. All impurity of thought has its origin in the sex brain. Water is used to bathe the body and to cleanse the body from the physical impurities of the virility of the sex brain. Water, therefore, is emblematic of purity. Jesus was baptised in water for this purpose. His real and true baptism was spiritual. The Holy Ghost is the true baptism. The Holy Ghost takes from the soul every idea and thought of carnality. It purifies the soul in thought and consciousness from the sensual.

The Holy Ghost is the Comforter that Jesus said the Father would send in his name, and he said he, that is, the Holy Ghost, will lead you into all truth. That is, will cleanse the soul from every carnal thought and desire. This is the real and true baptism. Water baptism which cleanses the physical body from the filth of virility of the sex brain is emblematic of the spiritual baptism of the Holy Ghost, which cleanses the soul from every carnal and lust desire. The flood was emblematic. It was the emblem of water baptism. That is, the age was carnal and sensual and God sent the flood and destroyed it by water.

The destruction of the race by water was the emblem of purification. It needed purification. "All

the earth was corrupt." The "Earth" here was the same "earth" that man was told to "subdue" and have dominion" over. "Earth" was the lust of the flesh. And all the race had become carnal and lustful, that is, corrupt. And the destruction of the race by the flood was emblematical of the fact that it needed spiritual purification.

Water baptism is emblematic of the same truth. The virile and well sexed person has impurities continuously generated in the body. The sex fluids permeate physical body. Such a person needs frequent baths to cleanse the physical man. These impurities of sex virility within the physical man is symbolic of spiritual impurity. The body is carnal and therefore the thought is carnal. The well sexed and virile person has more to overcome in thought than the less virile. Sex virility is the physical man, and all corruption is within the sex virility, both physically and spiritually.

The spiritual purification of the mind purifies the body physically. If carnal thoughts are not held in consciousness, the body will become purer. When carnal thoughts are held in consciousness, the sex fluids are generated which permeate the whole body and makes both body and mind impure. When carnal thoughts permeate the consciousness and the mind of the soul, the sex virility generates the sex fluids which feed the carnal senses and permeates the body and thought in consciousness and both body and mind become corrupt. The state of the mind is reflected in the body. The carnal state of the race has diseased the race. All the race was corrupt when God sent the flood and destroyed it. The flood was emblematic of purifying the race. The physical purification of the



race by water baptism is emblematic of spiritual purification of the soul through the baptism of the holy spirit.

The baptism of the holy spirit is the eradication of every lust thought and desire from the consciousness of the soul, which purifies the soul from all carnal consciousness and thoughts. The soul thus purified is conscious of God and can see God and understand God as spirit through spiritual sight and the spiritual senses of the soul.

Jesus overcame every carnal thought and carnal desire when he received the baptism of the holy spirit, and was anointed. In his mind and soul, he was holy and perfect. He never thought a carnal thought nor had a carnal desire, after he received the baptism of the Holy Ghost. From twelve years of age until thirty, he lived the holy life of overcoming the serpent in thought and lust in consciousness. And when he had overcome the lust mind of the serpent completely in thought and consciousness, he received the baptism of the Holy Spirit, which made him the Son of God.

Jesus' spiritual body was so purified by the Holy state of his mind that John the Baptist cried out when he saw the Lord coming, to be baptised in Jordan, "Behold the Lamb of God, which taketh away the sins of the world." We love to think of that thought. We love to behold in our mind's eye the picture of the Master as he appeared to John, the Baptist. He was so pure in thought that his physical appearance was purity itself. The law of the thought of the soul was written upon his face. He was so pure that when John the Baptist saw him he knew he was the son of God. This state of purity was within the consciousness of the soul of



the Master and his body and face reflected the state of thought of his soul. The Master had overcome the suggestion of the lie of the serpent that there is pleasure and life in the carnal senses of the sex act. The act which is the essence of the mind of the serpent and which is the cause and the moving force of all carnal actions of man, did not appeal to him, nor tempt him in thought nor desire. Hence his physical body reflected the purity of the consciousness of his soul. By this law he healed the sick.

There can be no sickness, disease and death unless the soul believes the lie of the serpent that there is pleasure and life within the sex act. If the mind believes this lie of the serpent, then the soul is subject to spiritual death and the body to physical disease. If the mind believes the lie of the serpent that there is pleasure in the carnal senses, it must also accept the lie, there is pain in the carnal senses.

There can be no pleasure in the senses unless there is pain in the senses. For every supposed pleasure there must be pain. If there be life in the senses of the sex act, then there must be death within the carnal senses. There can be no life in the carnal senses, unless there also be death in the carnal senses. The lie of the serpent, that there is pleasure within the senses of the sex act, is the supreme lie of the senses, hence, childbirth is the supreme pain of the senses.

The belief of the lie of the serpent, that there is life within the carnal senses of the sex act, is the supreme lie of the serpent, hence, death follows as the supreme lie of the serpent. Our Lord overcame this supreme lie of the serpent that there is

pleasure and life within the senses of the sex act. Hence, he was not subject to the law of disease and death. He was so perfect and holy in his own state of consciousness that he cast out of others the lie of the serpent, that there is pleasure and life within the sex act and healed them. If you could eradicate from the consciousness of the race and the thought and belief of the race, that there is pleasure and life within the senses of the sex act, you would eliminate from the race disease and death. If the race should become so spiritual that it disbelieved in the lie of the serpent that there is pleasure and life within the senses of the sex act, the race would overcome the law of disease and death, and go out of the material body without death, as Jesus did on the Mount of Ascension. All of the Master's Healing was governed by this spiritual law. He was so spiritual and Holy in His own state of consciousness that he cast out the lie of the serpent that there is pleasure and life within the senses of the sex act from the consciousness and minds of others, and healed them, and restored them to their right minds. The moment that he cast out of their consciousness the thought and belief that there is pleasure and life within the senses of the sex act, they were made whole and restored to their right minds.

They were not subject to the law of insanity and disease when their souls were purified; and the lie of the serpent that there is life and pleasure in the senses was eradicated from the consciousness of their souls. We see this law daily demonstrated before us. Go to any insane asylum and the female inmates thereof, who have become insane from over sex indulgence, will cry out to every man that

passes in the most vulgar terms, to come to them and to satisfy their sex passions.

The female will expose her person to any stranger of the opposite sex and demand sex gratification without any modesty whatever. In thought and consciousness, she is under the law of the serpent. She believes there is life and pleasure in the senses of the sex act. Her soul is in outer darkness spiritually; she is in the same state of thought and consciousness of "earthbound" spirits who have passed into spirit life. The "earthbound" spirits, that is, spirits that have not overcome the lust of the flesh while here in the material body, go into spirit life, believing the lie of the serpent, that there is life and pleasure within the senses of the sex act. They are in a carnal state of consciousness and spiritually in outer darkness. They are lost. They are insane in thought and consciousness just as the insane in thought and consciousness are, who inhabit our insane asylums, while living.

Go to any insane asylum and there you will see men chained and shackled to prevent them from practicing "self abuse." They have accepted the lie of the serpent that there is pleasure in gratifying the senses of the sex act in the violation of the laws of nature. They have become insane. Their souls are in that state of consciousness wherein they are subject to the law of the carnal senses. The inmates of the insane asylums are there as the result of the lie of the serpent. They have accepted the lie of the dragon, that there is pleasure and life within the senses of the sex act, and their souls have come under that law of thought and they are spiritually dead, and diseased both in mind and body. Jesus healed this class while on earth. The



Master was so holy in thought and consciousness that he cast out of their thoughts the belief of pleasure and life in the gratification of the senses of the sex act, and restored them to their right minds and healed their physical bodies. The apostles and the early Christians restored the insane to their right minds and healed the sick by the same spiritual law. The saints have done it in all ages. But the saints are those who have been liberated from bondage and slavery to carnality. They have been emancipated from lust. They have overcome the lie of the serpent in mind and thought, that there is life and pleasure in the gratification of the carnal senses in the sex act.

That is what the word "Saint" means. It comes from the Greek word meaning to set free, to emancipate. It means spotless and without blemish. The etymology of the word, spiritually speaking, means to be set free, and liberated in thought and consciousness, from every lust desire and carnal thought of the sex lust of the flesh. This is "Sanctification." Only those are "Sanctified" and are "Saints" who have overcome every thought and desire of the sex lust of the flesh. And those who have overcome this lie of the serpent, that there is pleasure and life within the senses of the sex act, have healed the sick and restored the insane to their right mind in all ages. Moses did it, the Prophets did it, Jesus did it, and the Apostles did it. True Christianity in all ages will do it. There was no insanity, no disease and no death until man who was made in God's image accepted the lie of the serpent that there is pleasure and life within the senses of the sex act, and when this lie is overcome there is neither disease nor death.



## CHAPTER V.

The gods of the heathens were the gods of the sex senses and the lust senses of the brain. These gods were the ideas and images made upon the consciousness of the soul through the sensation of the carnal senses. This is idolatry. All the pagan temples are simply the manifestation physically of the thoughts within the consciousness of the soul, and which came into the consciousness of the soul through the sensation of the carnal senses. All of the material gods that the pagans constructed represented the thoughts within the consciousness of the soul and which came into the consciousness of the soul through the sensation of the carnal senses. And the pagan gods are with us today as of old and will be until the carnal senses are overcome in thought and every idea and image of the carnal senses are banished from the consciousness of the soul.

Physical blindness is emblematic of spiritual blindness. Physical deafness is emblematic of spiritual deafness. Physical dumbness is emblematic of spiritual dumbness. When Jesus opened the physical eyes of the blind and gave them physical sight, it was only emblematic that he was opening their souls, blinded carnally, and giving them spiritual light. When he opened their physical ears and restored them to hearing, it was only emblematic that he was opening their spiritual ears that were deaf through carnality, and giving them spiritual hearing. When he loosed their dumb

tongues, so they could speak physically, it was only emblematic that he was loosing their souls from carnal dumbness so they could speak with spiritual sense and understand with spiritual understanding. For the diseases which produce physical deafness, dumbness and blindness come from the lie of the serpent, and the belief is the lie that there is pleasure and life within carnality.

The race has been diseased physically in all ages due to this lie of the serpent and the race will be diseased physically until it overcomes this lie of the serpent and comes into spiritual understanding and the mind of the Christ.

The physician was originally a priest. *Materia Medica* will not heal the sick. Material law will not heal the sick. Material law is of the carnal senses. If the race would overcome disease the physician must become the priest, as he was originally, and all the race spiritually must become priests, and spiritually overcome the lie of the serpent, that there is pleasure and life in the gratification of the carnal senses. When the race shall have reached this degree of spiritual understanding there will be no more insane asylums, hospitals and jails. The race will not need them. This is the mission of Christianity. But the race will be diseased and insane and criminal as long as the race accepts the lie of the serpent, that there is pleasure and life in the gratification of the carnal senses.

Orthodoxy is of the soul. It is spiritual ideas. Heresy is of the sex brain. It is carnal ideas. There is sin and death, but they are within the sex brain and sex mind, and when the mind and thought of the sex brain and sex mind have been

overcome in consciousness and thought, sin and death will be no more.

There are two kinds of oracles. These oracles are of the sex brain and of Soul. They are the two states of thought. The pagan oracles had their temples of prophecy. Their state of understanding was of carnal and sex senses. Their wisdom was within the mind of the sex brain. This is sooth-saying, witchcraft and divination. The temple of Diana at Ephesus was one of these temples of sex worship, and soothsaying. The worship in these temples was sex worship. The pagans realized that there could be nothing holy conceived through this worship. They knew there could be nothing holy conceived within the mind of the generative organs. They knew that the conception and thought and mind of the generative organs were evil. Hence they had their gods conceiving and bearing children through their heads. They knew that all that is holy had to be spiritually conceived. Hence, the pagans had the gods conceiving through their heads, without sensual intercourse. They knew that all that was conceived through sexual intercourse and of the carnal was unholy. The carnal senses with them were their oracles. They prophesied through the wisdom of the carnal senses.

It was not so with the Hebrew prophets. They became so spiritual that they overcame the oracles of the carnal senses and the sex brain in thought and consciousness, and spoke through the wisdom and spiritual understanding of the Soul. Their prophesies were of soul sense and spiritual understanding. Their oracles emanated from the Soul, and not the carnal senses, and with this spiritual

understanding, they overcame the sex mind completely in thought, and subdued the "Earth"—that is—overcame the sex brain in thought and consciousness. Enoch was translated by this law from the material body without natural death. By overcoming the oracles of the carnal senses and of the sex brain, and coming into the oracles of the wisdom of the soul, the prophets healed the lepers and foretold the coming of the Christ.

Spiritual understanding today can only be ascertained by the race as it overcomes the oracles and thoughts of the sex brain, and comes into the understanding of the oracles of the spiritual senses of the soul. "And the whole earth was of one language, and of one speech. And it came to pass, as they journeyed from the east, that they found a plain in the land of Shinar; and they dwelt there. And they said one to another, Go To, let us make brick, and burn them thoroughly. And they had brick for stone, and slime had they for mortar. And they said, Go to, let us build us a city and a tower, whose top may reach unto Heaven; and let us make us a name, lest we be scattered abroad upon the face of the whole earth. And the Lord came down to see the city and the tower, which the children of men builded. And the Lord said, Behold, the people is one, and they have all one language; and this they begin to do: and now nothing will be restrained from them, which they have imagined to do.

"Go to, let us go down, and there confound their language, that they may not understand one another's speech. So the Lord scattered them abroad from thence upon the face of all the earth: and they left off to build the city. Therefore is



the name of it called Babel; because the Lord did there confound the language of all the earth: and from thence did the Lord scatter them abroad upon the face of all the earth." Gen. 11:1-9.

"These are the families of the sons of Noah, after their generations, in their nations: and by these were the nations divided in the earth after the flood." Gen. 10:32. Noah was "Righteous" and obtained "grace with the Lord." He was Spiritual. "Righteousness" is spirituality. He obtained "grace with the Lord" because of his non-sensuality. Because Noah overcame the Cain mind, and obtained righteousness, he found "Favor with the Lord." "Noah found grace in the eyes of the Lord." Gen. 6:8.

The remainder of the human race was so lustful, sensual and wicked that God destroyed them all. They were worshiping idols, that is—the carnal ideas and images of the sex brain. "And God sent the flood and destroyed them all." After the flood "Wickedness" was destroyed from the face of the earth. Lust had comparatively gone out of the consciousness of the race. But it didn't take the Cain mind long to obtain control of the hearts of men. They were soon bowing down to Baal—that is, worshiping the lust thoughts and desires of the sex mind and sex brain.

When the flood was over and the waters had receded, "The whole earth was of one language and of one speech." that is, the whole race was spiritual, and had one mind, and that was the Soul mind. Those who had come out of the Ark, and their immediate descendants, were spiritual and non-sensual in thought. They had "one lan-

guage" and "one speech," that is, they had one mind and that mind was spiritual.

Language is emblematic of thought, it is the expression of thought. When the ideas and thoughts are spiritual, the language that expresses them is spiritual. When the ideas and thoughts are carnal, the language that expresses them is carnal. The immediate descendants of Noah were spiritual, and their thoughts and language were spiritual. But it did not take them long to become carnal, and then confusion set in, and their language became carnal, and they could not understand each other. The "Earth" here out of which they made brick to build the tower of Babel is the same "Earth" that man was told to "Subdue" and have "dominion" over. It was the carnal and lust senses and the "slime" was the filth in thought of the sex brain.

The entire metaphysics of this language is sensual and non-sensual in thought. It is the Abel and Cain mind in thought. "And they said one to another, Go to, let us bake brick and burn them thoroughly. And they had brick for stone, and slime had they for mortar."

This language is the metaphysics of the carnal mind expressing itself for the desire of sex gratification. It is the Cain mind expressing itself in thought and murdering the soul. It is the metaphysics in thought of every man and woman who gratifies the sex passion. The "Earth and the mortar" are the carnal senses and the "slime" is the filth in thought, thereof. "And they said, Go to, let us build us a city and a tower, whose top may reach unto Heaven." This is the metaphysics of passion and lust. The city that they builded was

the same city that Cain builded and named after his carnal son Enoch. It is a city of sex passion, and carnal ambitions and desires. Men and women are building cities today dedicated to the same carnal state of consciousness and thought. Men and women today are building within the sex brain the same tower of carnal thoughts and desires.

They have builded these cities of carnality and erected these towers of lust in all ages and been diseased and insane as the result. They wanted to reach Heaven through this city of the carnal senses and tower of lust desires. They want to consecrate the gratification of the sex passion as divine and supremely good.

Men and women today and in all ages have attempted to consecrate the gratification of the sex passion as supremely good. They have attempted to make Heaven out of Hell and God out of Evil, and to realize harmony out of discord. With them the gratification of the sex passion and lust desires is the supremely Good and Heaven, but this is the lie of the serpent. It is death and hell.

"And the Lord came down to see the city and the tower, which the children of men builded. And the Lord said, Behold the people is one, and they have all one language; and this they began to do, and now nothing will be restrained from them which they have imagined to do." They had "imagined" in their lustful and carnal and wicked hearts that the gratification of sex lust was good. They were worshiping the carnal senses. They were accepting the lie of the serpent as the truth, and God said, "Nothing should be restrained from them which they have imagined to do." He is thus speaking to man today and has thus spoken to them in

all ages. As they "imagined" carnal desires within their sex brains and desire the gratification of the lust of the flesh, he withholds his spiritual mind and spiritual ideas from the consciousness of their souls and lets them "go to it" in the gratification of the sex lust of the flesh, and spiritually die as the result. As they "imagine" carnal desires in their sex brain and long for the gratification of the sex lust of the flesh, they go out of his presence in thought and consciousness into spiritual darkness and death.

God said, "Go to, let us go down and there confound their language, that they may not understand one another's speech." As men leave God in thought and consciousness, they go into the carnal senses in thought and consciousness and become confounded and confused in thought and understanding. As men become carnal, God casts them out of his spiritual presence. As they lose God's spiritual ideas within the consciousness of their souls, they come into the possession of carnal ideas within their souls and are confounded and confused in thought and cannot understand God and anything that is spiritual.

"So the Lord scattered them abroad from thence upon the face of all the earth and they left off to build the city. Therefore, is the name of it called Babel, because the Lord did confound the language of all the earth." The Hebrew Babel is the same as the Greek Babylon. Babylon was the ancient city of sensuality and lust. It was the center of carnality and sensuality of ancient times. It is therefore taken as the symbol of lust. It is used in the Bible to type the city of sensual thoughts and lust desire of the sex brain. All through the



Bible it is used as the symbol of sensuality and lust. The city of sensuality is the city that they had builded. This city was built within the carnal "imagination" and lust desires of their sex brains. To this city all the merchants of the earth have brought their merchandise in all ages.

The merchandise and commerce of the world in all ages have been conducted in this city of lust and sensuality. It is the city of thought, and that thought is carnality. It is the city of confusion, and the thought of that city is lust. It is the city of ambition, and the thought of that city is vanity. It is the city of pride, and the thought of that city is selfishness.

Within this city all the wares of the ages have had their origin. Within this city all the strife and confusion of the ages have been produced. Within this city all of the injustice and oppression of history have been produced. The evils of the race originate in this city of carnality. Within this city the diseases and insanity which have afflicted the human race have been conceived. It is the opposite of the city of the New Jerusalem. The New Jerusalem is the city of God's ideas. The New Jerusalem is the city of spiritual thoughts and desires. The New Jerusalem is the city of God.

Babylon, or Babel, is a city of Satan. The New Jerusalem is the city of the Soul, or Abel. Babylon, or Babel, is the city of Cain.

As we come into the Christ mind and overcome carnality and lust in thought, we leave the city of Babel, or Babylon, and go into the city of the living God, which is the city of the New Jerusalem. As men go into the city of Babel, or Babylon, which is the city of carnal thoughts, they no longer have

one language, but many languages. They have many languages, and these languages are the carnal senses and are confusion.

While I write, all Europe is within the city of Babylon, or Babel, in thought and confusion, and death reigns there. Men are falling fast and thick, murdered and dead, throughout Europe as the result of the senses. The age is within the city of Babel, or Babylon. The race in the age in which I write resides in thought and consciousness within the city of their sex brains, which is the city of Babylon and the city of the carnal senses and as the result, confusion of thought, death and hell rage practically throughout the civilized world. This state of thought is of the Satanic mind. And these conditions follow as the result.

Our Lord said, "These things must be," and they will continue until the race, as a race, comes out of this city of carnality and the lust senses in thought. Hence, war, confusion, plagues, disease and insanity will continue with the race until the end of time. These conditions will continue until they destroy themselves. They will continue until the mind of the serpent destroys them all, and then the stars will fall and the firmament will roll back like a scroll, and time will be no more. "But woe be unto her who is with child in that day." Woe be unto them who are residing within this city of carnal thoughts and lust desires in that day of final judgment. "And as they led him away, they laid hold upon one Simon, a Cyrenian, coming out of the country, and on him they laid the cross, that he might bear it after Jesus. And there followed him a great company of people, and of women, which also bewailed and lamented him. But

Jesus turning unto them said, Daughters of Jerusalem, weep not for me, but weep for yourselves, and for your children. For, behold the days are coming, in the which they shall say, Blessed are the barren, and the wombs that never bear, and the paps which never gave suck. Then shall they begin to say to the mountains, fall on us; and to the hills, cover us." Luke 23:26-30. The Master here referred to the day of the general judgment and the awful condition of those who shall not have come out of Babylon into the city of the New Jerusalem. This day was typed when the Roman army destroyed Jerusalem.

His language refers to the spiritual death of those who are still living in the city of carnal thoughts and lust desires. Spiritual death is their fate. They shall be shut out from the presence of God. They shall have no spiritual understanding of God. They shall have no spiritual ideas within the consciousness of their souls. They shall have the image of the "Beast," which is carnal ideas within the consciousness of their souls. They shall be in Babylon, or Babel, which is the city of lust and sensuality in thought.

The "Saints" shall be in the city of the New Jerusalem, which will be the city of spiritual ideas and spiritual thoughts. There will be no carnality there and no night. The City of Babylon will be the city of darkness, because it will be the city of Evil; that is, lust in thought. Evil only operates in the dark. Babylon will be the city of darkness and spiritual death.

"Now the serpent was more subtle than any beast of the field which the Lord God had made. And he said unto the woman, Yea, hath God said,



ye shall not eat of every tree of the garden?" Gen. 3:1. The serpent was the creation of the "Lord God." The creation of the "Lord God" is the creation of the carnal senses. Babylon is the creation of the "Lord God." The "Tower of Babel" is the creation of the "Lord God." This is the material creation. It is the "Earthly" creation. It is the Adamic creation, and it is carnal in nature. The creation of "God" is spiritual, and the "City of God" is a spiritual city. It is the city of the New Jerusalem. This city is neither carnal nor sensual. The creation of the "Lord" is Man, banished from the spiritual presence of "God" on account of sensuality. The creation of the "Lord God" is the spiritual state of the fallen angels who rebelled against God's holy nature. The creation of the "Lord God" is the spiritual state of the angels, whom God cast out of his presence on account of sin, which is lust in nature.

It was "God" who told man, made in his image, that he should not partake of lust, and it was the "Lord God" who made the serpent and the beast. The spiritual creation is of the nature of God, and is holy and spiritual. The creation of the "Lord God" is the spiritual state of the fallen who conceive lust in thought. These two creations ran all through the Bible. They prevail in all thoughts on this plane of existence.

In Paradise all thought is holy. It is the nature of the mind of God. In "Hell" all thought is carnal. This is the state of fallen spirits, who were cast out of the presence of God. This is the creation of the "Lord God." It is the creation wherein God has cast his spiritual being out of his spiritual presence for having sinned.



The creations of "God" and "Lord God" in Genesis are clear, and they run all through the Bible. In Revelation, all who have overcome the "Beast" return to the presence of God, and are in Paradise. They have overcome sensuality, and are in the New Jerusalem. All who have not overcome the "image of the beast" and the creation of the senses, which is the creation of the "Lord God," are in outer darkness. They have no spiritual understanding. "He that overcometh shall inherit all things; and I will be his God, and he shall be my son." Rev. 21:7. He that has overcome the "Beast," which is the creation of the "Lord God," shall inherit all things, and God will be his father, and he shall be the son of God. He is no longer cast out of the presence of God, which is the creation of the "Lord God," but he has overcome the lust of the flesh, and has returned to the spiritual creation of God, and "shall inherit all things." "But the fearful, and unbelieving, and the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, shall have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone: which is the second death." Rev. 21:8.

This is the creation of the "Lord God." It is the state of fallen spirits whom God has cast out of his presence for having sinned and yielded to sex lust. All that is "abominable" is within the sex brain. "Murder" is within the sex brain. "Whoredom" is within the sex brain. "Sorcery" is within the sex brain. "Idolatry" is within the sex brain. "Falsehood" is within the sex brain. All these things constitute the "false gods," which the man made in God's image and who is spirit, was told not

to yield to in thought. These are within the carnal senses.

The first commandment says, "Thou shalt have no other gods before me." Exodus 20:3. The "gods" here that man is told he shall not bow down to are the carnal senses of the sex brain, and the lust senses. When he yields to these "false gods" in thought, then he violates all the other commandments. When he yields to the opposite sex in the gratification of his passion, he is violating the first commandment. To gratify the sex passion, man will violate all the other commandments; he will steal, lie, cheat and murder to get the woman that he desires for the purpose of gratifying his sex passions. When the woman breaks the first commandment, she will break all the other commandments to get the man she desires sexually.

When men and women violate the first commandment, they will then break all the other commandments; but as long as they observe the first commandment and keep their souls pure and are not defiled by lust and sensuality in thought and act, they will observe all the other commandments. All hatred is within the sex; therefore, man must yield to the "other gods," which is the sex brain in thought, before he commits murder. As long as he observes the first commandment, he will not kill.

All hatred is within the sex. As long as man does not bow down to "other gods," and yield to the sex in thought, he will not hate, but will love. All deception is in the carnal mind, and so long as man keeps himself free from carnality in thought, he will not bow down to "false gods" and bear false witness. Every lawyer knows you cannot believe the testimony of a prostitute or a man who prac-

tices self abuse. All lust is in the sex brain. As long as a man keeps himself pure, he will not bow down to the "other gods" of the sex brain in thought and commit adultery.

All dishonesty is within the sex brain. As long as man keeps himself pure from carnal thoughts and does not bow down to "other gods" of the carnal senses, he will not steal. All covetousness is within the sex brain, and as long as man keeps himself pure in thought and does not bow down to the carnal and the "false gods" of these senses, he will not covet that which belongs to others.

The Sabbath day is the eternal day of spiritual rest. It was the state of consciousness before the serpent mind entered into thought. All that God created was "good and very good," and when he had finished his spiritual creation, which was "good and very good," it was the Sabbath. The Sabbath was not violated until the thought of lust entered into consciousness; hence, our Lord said, after he had overcome the mind of the serpent and become the Christ, that he was the "Lord of the Sabbath," and healed them everywhere on the Sabbath.

The non-sensual is the Sabbath. To violate the Sabbath, you must break the first commandment. So long as man keeps himself pure and does not yield in thought to "other gods" and serve the carnal senses of the sex brain, he will keep the Sabbath holy. So long as man serves God, his spiritual father, and does not yield in thought to the carnal senses of the sex brain, he will keep the Sabbath holy. All who keep the first commandment and do not yield to "other gods" and serve the carnal senses of the sex brain, shall overcome and shall inherit "all things," and God will be their Father and they

shall be His Sons. But those who violate the first commandment and yield to "other gods," and serve the carnal senses of the sex brain in thought and act, will violate all the other commandments. They will steal, they will lie, they will commit adultery, they will bear false witness, they will murder, they will violate the Sabbath day, which is spiritual, and break all the commandments.

"Those are the fearful, and the unbelieving, and the abominable, and the murderers, and the idolaters, and liars that shall have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone and which is the second death." "The fire and brimstone" are the carnal and lustful thoughts in the consciousness of their souls. They are out of the presence of God, spiritually. They are in the creation of the Lord God. "The Beast," that the "Lord God" made, controls their state of consciousness. And this "Beast" is the mind of fallen spirits, and this mind is carnal in nature.

The creation of God was a "Creation," and this creation was spiritual. Gen. 2:3. The creation of the "Lord God" was a "Formation," and this "Formation," which was material, is of the senses. Gen. 2:7. This record of "Creation" and "Formation" runs all through the Bible; one is spiritual and the other is carnal. It was God who told Eve that she should not eat of the tree of the forbidden fruit. It was the "Lord God" who said it is not good that man should be alone. This is the creation of the senses.



## CHAPTER VI.

The only "birth control" is the purity of the soul, and the only "eugenics" that will save the race from disease and insanity is the Christ mind within the consciousness of the soul.

The children of Israel, while "wandering" in the wilderness, multiplied in population greatly. Robert G. Ingersoll, the great agnostic, used this as an argument against the Bible. He said that their numbers, while in the wilderness, could not have increased to the extent claimed by the Bible. He said that the increase was too great to be true. The Great Agnostic had no spiritual understanding as to what the "wandering" in the wilderness by the Jews meant. They were wandering within the carnal senses and their carnal increase was their spiritual darkness. It was their wilderness of spiritual darkness.

The fact that they increased so rapidly carnally was the reason that they were "wandering" in the wilderness. Carnality made them spiritually blind. Gibbons, the great agnostic and historian, in his history of the rise and fall of the Roman Empire, admits this fact as a spiritual law. He admits that when Rome was in the noonday of her glory, that her people were pure. That the carnal was only indulged sexually for the purpose of propagation, but when Rome became carnal and corrupt then her civilization perished.

The true resurrection is the resurrection from this carnal state. This is the resurrection foretold

by the Psalmist. See 17th Psalm, 15th verse. It is the resurrection that Ezekiel saw. His vision of the resurrection was symbolic. The "dry bones" types spiritual death. God said he would put his spirit in them and they should live, and he would place them in the land of Canaan, and bring them into the land of Israel. Israel is the land of the soul and of soul sense. When we shall awake from this land of the "dry bones" and the carnal senses, we go into the land of the soul and of soul sense. This is the land of Israel and the land of the resurrection. It is only a step from the carnal sense to the soul sense. I shall soon take that step. The veil of the senses is growing thinner with me. I can almost see on the other side. It is spiritual vision there. I hope, as the veil grows thinner, that the vision will grow brighter until the Morning Star of Glory shall rise within my soul, and then there will be no more night and no more sorrow and no more death. This is the resurrection. It is the soul in the holy state of consciousness and in the "image" of the Father and in spiritual communion with the Father.

The Baptism of the Holy Spirit is the only true Baptism and the only true resurrection. It cleanses the soul from every lust thought and carnal desire of the senses, and creates "all things new" in thought and consciousness. This is the new creation in the thought and desires of the soul. It is soul purity. With this thought within the image of my soul, I have kept my soul and body together these many years; but my body is frail. Both of my parents were frail when I came here. My mother passed away when I was eighteen months old, and my father when I was nine years old. I

had many relatives who had good homes, but they had no interest in me; they had their own to care for and no place for an orphan child within their homes. They were controlled by the selfishness of the sex, and I was turned out into the cold world. I underwent many hardships and deprivations that my frail body would not stand. It soon told upon my physical condition. In growing up, when I reached that age when a boy should have the best of food and the best of care, I had neither. I lived off of poor food the most of the time, and many a time not enough of that.

While in College, I lived for two years in a cheap "mess hall" and ate the cheapest and the poorest of food. It was the best I could do. I had no one to help me through college. In this frail condition I developed a catarrhal trouble in my left ear during the last year I was in college. It was not looked after, and it developed into inflammation of the middle ear and finally into a mastoid trouble of the ear, which required four operations, and these operations wrecked my nervous system. This has made my life a burden. I have only lived through mind controlling matter.

In this frail condition I have attempted to give the world the spiritual truth of the Bible, but the effort has been too great on my nerves. I could get no help from any source. I do not know how this book is going to be printed. I have a friend who says he will have it printed. I cannot. I have no means. Within Kansas City there is being expended within one hour enough money upon sensuality and lust to print and publish all of my books on the Bible and scatter them throughout the world. In this Babylon money is being used

for degradation and lust. But not a cent can be secured for the spiritual ideas of God.

I know that this book and all of my writings on the Bible will be attacked by the sensual minded as the days come and go. My name will be reviled by them. They killed the prophets, crucified Jesus and the Apostles. The other day while conversing with my friend, Dr. W. A. Swann, he suggested the propriety of placing a statement in this book that those who read it may know that in days and generations to come who I am and the life I have lived. I consented to his suggestion, and his signed statement is herewith given as a part of this book, that those who read it may know of me and the mental attitude that I was in while writing this book:

Kansas City, Missouri.

Nov. 13, 1916.

"I have known Mr. Sidney C. Tapp, of Kansas City, Missouri, some six or seven years. When I first knew him, he was as good as a dead man. He has had four mastoid operations and one for appendicitis. These operations completely shocked and undermined his nervous system, and produced spinal complications which affected the vasarmotor center. His body almost completely perished for want of nerve force as the result of these operations and their effect. I never gave Mr. Tapp any medicine. He does not believe in medicine, but I am an osteopath physician, as well as a medical doctor, and I have frequently, as an osteopath physician, relaxed the spinal muscles. He has contractions of the muscles as the result of the operations. During these six or seven years in which I



have known Mr. Tapp, he has rebuilt his body. I attribute this as a result to the state of his mind. He has the finest texture of flesh that I ever saw. He has not a diseased organ in his body, nor a blemish on his body, except the scars produced by the operations. His eyes are clear and have the expression of the eyes of a young man; and I understand Mr. Tapp is forty-six years of age. His mind is quick and penetrating. While his face possesses wrinkles produced by the operations, yet it reflects the purity of a child. The man, physically, is very frail, but has one of the clearest minds I ever knew, and the purest flesh that I ever witnessed on a human being. I consider these as the results of clean thoughts and his pure life.

“W. A. SWANN, M. D., D.O.,

“Professor of Anatomy in the Eclectic Medical University, Kansas City, Missouri.”

It was the “Lord God” that caused the deep sleep to fall on Adam, and not “God.” This sleep was the sleep of the senses. “And the Lord God caused a deep sleep to fall upon Adam, and he slept: and he took one of his ribs, and closed up the flesh instead thereof; And the rib, which the Lord God had taken from man, made he a woman, and brought her unto the man.” Gen. 2:21-22. This is the creation of the senses, and it is non-spiritual. It is the creation of the “Lord God.” It is the creation wherein man is cast out from the presence of God, when he yields to the carnal in thought. Adam went to sleep when Eve was made, and man goes to sleep spiritually when the male and the female of the carnal creation come together sex-

sually. Their union is spiritual death. They go to sleep spiritually and die.

The Author has known in his lifetime of many couples who were carnal minded and indulged sexually until they became so dead to the spiritual senses that they wanted to die in the carnal senses, and in a carnal state of thought; hence, they would indulge sexually until they exhausted each other physically and then they would embrace each other and turn on the gas and die in each others arms. This frequently occurs to the sensuels who are polarized sexually. The world calls it love. It is lust and death.

The Author knew of a prominent Baptist minister who was a graduate of one of the leading Baptist colleges and theological seminaries of the country. He was the pastor of a leading Baptist church in a large city. He had married into a good family, and was the leader of his denomination. He had social caste and position. He became sexually infatuated with a yellow girl who was the housemaid, and sacrificed all for her. His wife and friends, and church board and church officials tried to wake him from his stupor of sensual sleep, and to break the hold that this mulatto girl had upon him. Their efforts were in vain. He indulged and indulged with this mulatto girl for years, until he reached that state of consciousness where he wanted to go to sleep in the senses and die. On a night after having conducted prayer meeting at his church, and indulged with her, he turned on the gas, placed the tube in his mouth and died. The Clergy and Religious Press made a great to-do over the fact that the Reverend Doctor had committed

suicide. They did not know why, because they did not know the Bible.

This is the law of the serpent. It is the law of the creation of Adam and Eve. All who are living in the carnal senses are out of the presence of God and are out of his spiritual creation in thought, and are in the carnal creation of the senses in thought, which is the "Formation" of the "Lord God." The "Creation" of God is spiritual. The "Formation" of the "Lord God" is the senses. The "Creation" of God is immortal mind, and the "Formation" of the "Lord God" is mortal mind. "And Adam said, this is now bone of my bones, and flesh of my flesh: she shall be called woman, because she was taken out of man. Therefore shall a man leave his father and his mother, and shall cleave unto his wife: and they shall be one flesh." Gen. 2:23-24. Adam, the carnal man, said this. God did not say it. Adam is the carnal man talking to himself. It is the carnal senses, speaking to the soul.

The senses declare this law unites the sexes of the carnal creation. It is lust that brings them together. The carnal man, deep in sensuality, is declaring the same law today. When they overcome lust, this law is broken, and they are spiritually divorced from each other as carnal beings and become the children of God. When they awake from the sleep of the carnal senses, they come into the light of truth, and know God spiritually. Man has no spiritual understanding until he is awakened from this night of the carnal senses which unites the sexes of this carnal creation. God said that they should not indulge these carnal senses unless they die. God said they should awake from this

night of sleep of the carnal senses if they would live.

“And the serpent said unto the woman, Ye shall not surely die.” Gen. 3:4. This was the lie of the serpent. It has deceived the daughters of men in all generations. It has deceived souls ever since the angels lost their holy state and the carnal creation came into existence. This serpent is the Cain mind which murdered Abel. This serpent is the devil, which our Lord refers to in John 8:44, when he says, “Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it.”

This serpent is the same Satan that Job said “was walking up and down in the earth, seeking whom he may devour.” And this serpent is located within the sex brain and the lust senses of men. He is the devil. He is sex lust. He creates all the confusion and strife of this life. He commands the armies and the navies of the nations of this earth, and produces all the murder and death of the ages. He fills the jails, hospitals and insane asylums of the world. He eats up the brains and bodies of men with syphilis. He fills their bodies with sores. He takes from them their sight. He produces blindness, deafness and dumbness through gonorrhea and syphilis. He produces the lame and the halt, the blind and the diseased. He is the “Prince of this world” and the enemy of our souls. His is the same devil to which our Master referred to in Mat. 13:38, when he said, “The field is the world; the good seed are the children of the king-



dom; but the tares are the children of the wicked one; the enemy that sowed them is the devil." This devil is sex lust. This devil is the same devil that John refers to in First John 3:8-9, when he says, "He that committeth sin is of the devil; for the devil sinneth from the beginning. For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that he might destroy the works of the devil. Whosoever is born of God doth not commit sin; for his seed remaineth in him: and he cannot sin, because he is born of God." The Master was so pure in thought that his sex seed remained within him. He never lost the sex fluids. He was so pure, and non-carnal, and non-lustful in thought and consciousness that he never lost the carnal seed. He was so pure that the soul of John the Baptist cried out when he saw him, "Behold the Lamb of God which taketh away the sins of the world."

The Saints in all ages have overcome the carnal and become so pure and non-sensual as to retain their sex seed within them. They did not believe the lie of the serpent that there is any pleasure and life in indulging the carnal senses and the sex act. This serpent in Genesis is the same devil to which our Master referred in Matthew and John, and to which the Apostle John here refers. He is lust. The carnal mind is the state of thought of the fallen spirits. "Marriage and giving in marriage" and propagation here in this fallen state is the Satanic mind; hence, our Lord says that when they have been resurrected, that is, have overcome lust, they neither "marry nor are given in marriage, but are equal unto the angels, and are the children of God, being the children of the resurrection. All

death is in lust. Lust is the mind of the fallen spirits, and it is death.

The Author personally knows one physician who, during his professional career, has taken three dead bodies, who died in the act, from the persons of women. This frequently occurs—the law is death.

The president of one of the leading corporations of this country, and who was drawing a salary of fifty thousand dollars a year, died in the sex act on the person of a sporting woman in a hotel. The serpent is death to the man at “court and to the man at plow.” Lust has no favorites.

The Author knows from his own personal experience of many other cases. Many men go into eternity during the sex act. The law is death. The Author knows of a physician who tells him that he presumes he has, during his professional career, been called to at least a hundred and fifty women who had lost consciousness during the sex act. I personally know of a woman—I knew her and the man well—who lost consciousness during the sex act, and she told me personally that her mind was not right for many weeks. In this state of carnal thought, the “image” comes into the consciousness of the soul and these “images” of lust remain there. The insane asylums are filled with men and women who have gone under the influence of the serpent during the sex act.

They become Satanic, they have “the image of the beast within their foreheads.” They cannot come out from under the influence of this “image of the beast.” They are insane. Souls go into spirit life in the same state of thought, and are lost. “Seeing ye have purified your souls in obeying the truth

through the spirit unto unfeigned love of the brethren, see that ye love one another with a pure heart fervently: being born again, not of corruptible seed, but of incorruptible, by the word of God, which liveth and abideth forever." First Peter 1:22-23. The "Corruptible seed" here to which St. Peter refers is the serpent that was in Eden. It is "The Beast." It is lust. It is the sex fluids which are given forth as the result of the carnal in thought. It is the seed of the sex act. This corruptible seed to which St. Peter refers is the same seed that St. John says remains within those who have been "Born to God." They become so pure and non-sensual in thought that they retain the sex seed. St. Peter says, "Seeing ye have purified your souls in obeying the truth through the spirit unto unfeigned love of the brethren, see that ye love one another with a pure heart fervently."

The Pure in heart are the non-carnal in thought. The pure in heart are those who have overcome the serpent, and lust. The pure in heart have overcome every idea and thought of the senses, and our blessed Lord says, "Blessed are the pure in heart, for they shall see God." The pure in heart have overcome the carnal and lust ideas of the flesh. They do not see with the carnal senses of the eye, but with the spiritual eyes of the soul, and they behold God as spirit through the spiritual vision of the soul. Love is of the soul. Hatred is of the serpent. Lust is jealousy. Spirituality is love.

St. Peter says, "Being born again, not of corruptible seed, but of incorruptible, by the word of God, which liveth and abideth forever." "Corruptible seed" is the sex fluid. This is death. The mind that is carnal generates the sex fluid and looses it



and it is spiritual death. Hence, under the Mosaic law, the penalty was death to loose the sex fluids. "The word of God" is God's ideas. A word is the emblem of an idea. We express ideas through words. God's idea is his word. When we overcome the carnal ideas of the flesh, and come into the consciousness of the spiritual ideas of God, we have the "Word of God;" and St. Peter says that "the word of God liveth and abideth forever." God is spirit, and spirit is eternal. The overcoming of the "Corrupt seed," which is lust and which St. Peter and St. John referred to, is the coming into the consciousness of the spiritual ideas of God. This is the new birth and the regeneration, "which were born, not of blood, nor the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God." John 1:13.

This was the spiritual conception of our Lord, by the blessed Virgin, and we must all be spiritually conceived to become the sons of God. This overcoming of the "Corruptible seed" and the lust of the flesh is the "new birth" to which our Lord referred when he said, "You must be born again." As we overcome this "Corruptible seed" and every carnal thought and lust desire, we come into the spiritual ideas of the divine mind and the consciousness of God as spirit, and as the father of our souls; and this is the regeneration—the re-creation of the spirit to which our Lord referred.

The overcoming of the "Corruptible seed" and the sex lust of the flesh is through, and by the power of, the Holy Spirit, the "Comforter" whom the Master said "He would send in His name." The Holy Spirit, which is the "Comforter" eradicates and removes from our souls every lust desire and every idea of the lust of the flesh; then we behold



God as our spiritual Father through the spiritual sense of the soul, and in this state of consciousness we retain the sex fluids and our bodies remain pure, and we neither "marry nor are given in marriage;" neither do we propagate in the flesh, and we "can die no more." In this state of consciousness. if we become completely spiritual. we have power over the material law and the carnal senses and can heal the sick and restore the insane to their right minds. And if we can become entirely spiritual, we can ascend out of our material bodies as the Savior did, and as Moses did, and as Elijah did, and as Enoch did.

Man and woman, as male and female, were joined together in the flesh as the result of the "fall." It is lust that makes their flesh one. That was what Jesus meant when he said "what God hath joined together, let not man put asunder." Man cannot put asunder; when they are sexually mated, there is nothing that will separate them until they have indulged and gratified their lust. They will indulge when they are sexually mated until they destroy each other. Artificial law cannot change this natural law. That is what Jesus meant when he referred to this passage of Scripture in Genesis. If they are not mated sexually, they do not become one flesh. They will not remain together. Their carnal minds are not one in thought. There is no union between them. When they are mated sexually, the only thing that will divorce them is the holy spirit. When they become spiritually pure, they become divorced carnally. Paul had this idea in mind when he said, "Honor a widow who is a widow indeed;" that is, a woman who has become

so pure that she is a widow in thought should be spiritually honored.

A woman may be a widow according to the rules of society and law, and yet be a harlot. She may be a fornicator in thought. Then she is not a widow indeed. She is not a widow indeed until she has overcome carnality, and become pure in thought:

The Word in Revelation says, "She is not a widow. She is a harlot in thought." The harlots in thought are everywhere. They fill the insane asylums. Impurity in thought diseases mind and body and soul. They are possessed. The Cain within them produces insanity and disease. Cain means to be "possessed," and "possession" is carnal thoughts and desires. Those who have these carnal thoughts and ideas are possessed of devils. These are the same devils that Jesus was casting out of the diseased and insane. These are the same devils that lead the young man and young woman into the churches of our supposed Christianity where they are married by a man who calls himself a Minister of the Gospel, but who, in fact, is a minister of the Carnal senses. It is the same state of thought which caused the women in olden times to go to the temples of sex worship in Babylon and the Orient and there fall prostrate and remain until some man came and accepted them and gratified their sex desires. It is the Satanic mind within Consciousness.

Moses granted divorcements, for "the hardness of the heart," that is, they had indulged carnally until they hated each other, and he let them separate. The serpent produces self hatred and hatred of others, and especially the sex mate.

On the Mount of Transfiguration, Moses and Elijah were there with the Savior. Moses and Elijah had overcome the mind of the serpent and the "Corruptible Seed" and were translated without physical death. Hence, when the Master was transfigured through spiritual sense on the Mount of Transfiguration, they were there with the Master in his spiritual Transfiguration. Scholastic theology, for centuries and thousands of years, has been looking for the "Burial place of Moses." The Bible says that "the Lord buried Moses, and no man knows where his grave is to this day." We do not presume that the Scholastic theologians will ever find the physical grave of Moses. There was no physical grave for Moses. "The Lord buried him." "The Lord's burial" is transfiguration, the translation. The serpent's burial is the material grave. We all go to the grave, because we are yielding to the mind of the serpent in thought and consciousness. We go to the grave as the result of lust in our thoughts.

If we would "Subdue and have dominion over the earth," that is, over lust, as God commanded us, we would not die materially, but would go out of these material bodies without material death. We would be translated. Enoch, Elijah, Moses and our Savior "Subdued" and had "Dominion" over the "Earth." They overcame lust in consciousness, and were translated.

"The Lord buried" our Savior when he ascended on the Mount of Ascension. His ascension was his burial. And this ascension was the ascending spiritually above every thought of lust in consciousness. Heaven is upward, and hell is downward in thought. The Jew thought hell was in the center



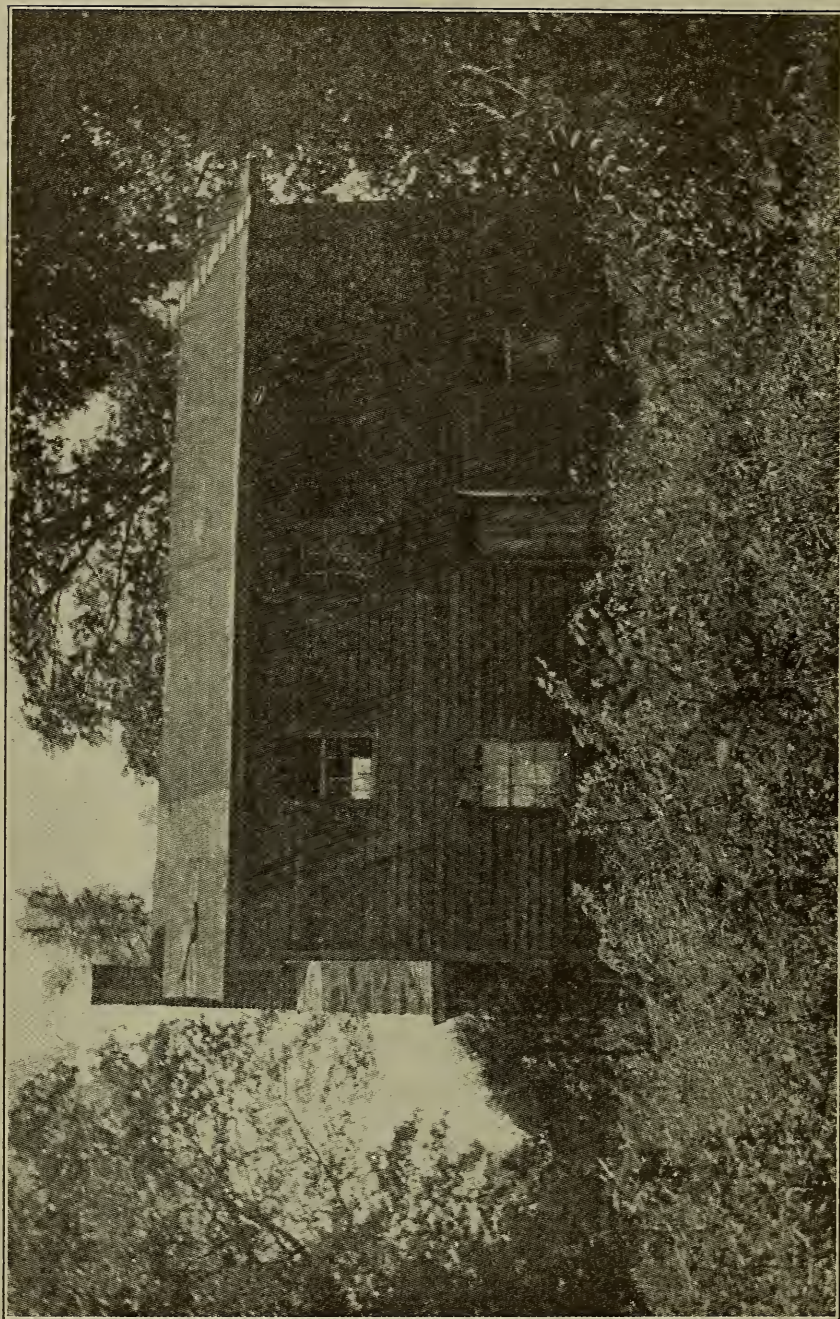
of the earth. The "Earth" is carnality, and hell is the center and the essence of carnality in thought. Heaven is spirituality, and heaven consists in the essence of the spiritual in thought. Hell is low thoughts—lust. Heaven is spiritual thoughts. Hell is carnal in thought. All that is carnal is low and degrading in thought; all that which is spiritual is high and elevating in thought.

Heaven and Hell are laws of thought. Hence, our Master, when he overcame the carnal completely in thought, so as to go out of his material body ascending upward, as the symbol of his spiritual state of consciousness, he was above every carnal thought in consciousness. Hence, he went out of his material body, and this state of thought is high and elevating, hence, he ascended as he went out of his material body into complete spiritual sense. He said he would come as he went, and his coming will be spiritual.

Every carnal idea and thought will be banished from the consciousness of the souls of the redeemed. His coming as the Christ into the consciousness of the redeemed means the banishment of every carnal thought and idea from the souls of the redeemed. Then St. John says, "We shall be like him." He is spiritual and we will be spiritual. He is above the carnal in thought, and then we will be above the carnal in thought. As St. Paul said, "Then we shall know as we are known." The Father beholds us with the spiritual eye and spiritual vision; then we shall behold the Father, with the spiritual eye and the vision of the soul. We shall see not with carnal and material eyes, but with the spiritual eyes of the soul, and with spiritual sense. The serpent will be lost in consciousness. The car-



nal will know us not, and we will know it not. The material senses will be no more to us, and we will be no more to them. We shall then be in the "image and likeness of the Father."



HOUSE NEAR HILLSBORO, ORANGE COUNTY, N. C., WHERE SIDNEY C. TAPP WAS BORN.

## CHAPTER VII.

“And the serpent said unto the woman, Ye shall not surely die; for God doth know that in the day ye eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened, and ye shall be as gods knowing good and evil. And when the woman saw that the tree was good for food, and that it was pleasant to the eyes and a tree to be desired, to make one wise, she took of the fruit thereof and did eat and gave also unto her husband with her; and he did eat. And the eyes of them both were opened and they knew that they were naked and they sewed fig leaves together and made themselves aprons.” Gen. 3:4-7. The serpent here was lust. It was the carnal mind, the Cain mind. The serpent said to Eve, that God knew that in the day she ate thereof that her eyes would be opened and she would be as gods knowing good and evil.

The serpent said that it would be God and not the “Lord God” that would know this; that is, that the spiritual creation of which God is the Father would know and become wise and conscious of the carnal creation. “The eyes that were to be opened” were the carnal eyes of the material creation. The soul was to become conscious of the carnal senses of the material creation. The soul would become conscious of lust. “Ye shall be as gods.” “Gods” here are the carnal senses of the sex brain. They are the same “gods” that man is told not to bow down to in the first commandment. They are the “gods” of carnal thoughts and ideas. These carnal



thoughts and ideas within the consciousness of the soul are the "gods" of the first commandment, and the "gods" of idolatry. They are the "gods" of sex worship. "Knowing good and evil" is the law of thought in this fallen state. Good is spiritual and evil is carnal. Good is spirituality and evil is carnality. Good is of the soul and evil is of the sex brain. "Man made in the image of God" only knew good, but when he indulged lust he knew evil, that is, carnality. The "tree" that was pleasant to the eyes was a tree of carnality. And "the eyes" are the carnal senses. The tree of life is the Christ mind, and this "tree of life" is within Eden. This "tree of life" is the soul in the "image of God." Man had this "tree of life" until he partook of the "tree" of carnality, and died spiritually.

When man shall overcome the "tree" of carnality, he shall return to Eden, where the "tree of life" is "for the healing of the nations." The "tree of life" is spiritual. The "tree of death" is carnal. It takes the "tree" of carnality to make one wise as to the carnal senses and spiritual death. Eve "gave to her husband with her and he did eat," that is, they had sexual intercourse and their souls lost the "image of God" and died spiritually.

"And the eyes of them both were opened, and they knew that they were naked, and they sewed fig leaves together and made themselves aprons." Their souls were now conscious of the carnal senses. Their spiritual eyes had been opened to the senses of carnal death. They were in a dual state of consciousness, and thinking both good and evil. They now thought both spiritual ideas and carnal ideas, and the battle between spirituality and carnality was going on within their souls, and



they were "ashamed." That law permeates all thought in this state of existence. It is as true today as then.

Humanity is as "ashamed" of evil and carnality today as it was then. No human formalities of men can change this law. No marriage ceremony can change it. No forms of man can make lust spiritual. Marriage is not "sacred" but "secret." That which takes place between a husband and wife sexually is not "sacred" but it is "secret." It is "secret" because it is "evil." No man who has any moral consciousness and respectability would want his best friend or nearest relative to witness the sex relations between him and his wife. No woman, unless she is "abandoned" and had lost all hope of redemption, would permit another to witness the sex relation between her and her husband. "Shame" and "guilt" are there and that is the reason. "Sin" and "death" are there and that is the reason. "Sacred" means that which is spiritual and holy. If the relations between husband and wife were "sacred" there would be nothing secret about them. The woman of refinement and some degree of spirituality will hide her face from her husband when the sex act is over, because she is conscious that her soul has been through carnality and shame and he has been the cause of it.

The author has personally been told by those who have visited the most barbaric states of Africa that this law of "shame" prevails there just as deeply as it does in the most high and civilized states of society; that in some of the lowest states of barbarism there, that the female will hide her face from the male when the sex relations take

place, and turn her face to the ground so as to hide her "shame."

The consciousness of sin and spiritual death are written within the soul, as the result of carnality and the "fall." Every individual of the race has the tower of "Babel" and the cities of Babylon, Sodom and Gomorrah within him. And the race is conscious of guilt and shame until these cities of lust and death are overcome within the consciousness of the soul. A minister of the Gospel could not preach the truth of the Bible to a carnal minded congregation. They would not tolerate it. A man who had overcome carnality and lust and has come into the spiritual understanding of the Christ mind, and the spiritual ideas of God, and thereby became a minister of the Gospel, could not tell this Gospel, this good news of the spiritual ideas of God, to a carnal minded congregation.

Jesus tried this at Nazareth, his native city. Our Lord, after his baptism, and after he had overcome the mind of the serpent completely and had been baptised with the Holy Ghost, and had become the Christ, that is, the spiritual life of the Father, returned to Nazareth, his native city, to preach the Gospel to the people there. He went there to tell them of the new state of mind which is spiritual and not carnal in nature, and which is the Gospel; but they would not receive his message, nor would they receive him.

"And Jesus returned in the power of the spirit, into Galilee, and there went out a fame of him through all the region round about. And he taught in their synagogues, being glorified of all. And he came to Nazareth, where he had been brought up, and as his custom was, he went into the syna-

gogue on the Sabbath day and stood up for to read. And there was delivered unto him the book of the prophet Esias. And when he had opened the book he found the place where it was written, The spirit of the Lord is upon me, because he hath anointed me to preach the Gospel to the poor; he hath sent me to heal the broken hearted, to preach deliverance to the captives, and recovering of sight to the blind, to set at liberty them that are bruised, to preach the acceptable year of the Lord. And he closed the book and he gave it again to the minister and sat down. And the eyes of all-them that were in the synagogue were fastened on him. And he began to say unto them, This day is this scripture fulfilled in your ears. And all bare him witness, and wondered at the gracious words which proceeded out of his mouth. And they said, is not this Joseph's son? And he said unto them, Ye will surely say unto me this proverb, physician heal thyself. Whatsoever we have heard done in Capernaum, do also here in thy country. And he said, Verily I say unto you, no prophet is accepted in his own country. But I tell you of a truth, many widows were in Israel in the days of Elias when the Heaven was shut up three years and six months, when great famine was throughout all the land; but unto none of them was Elias sent save unto Sarepta, a city of Sidon, unto a woman that was a widow. And many lepers were in Israel in the time of Eliseus the prophet. And none of them was cleansed saving Naaman, the Syrian. And all they in the synagogue when they had heard these things were filled with wrath. And rose up and thrust him out of the city, and led him unto the brow of the hill whereon their city was built, that they might cast him down head-

long, but he passing through the midst of them, went his way." Luke 4:14-30.

The scene that took place in Nazareth when the Lord returned to his native city would take place in any city today where a real minister of the Gospel would attempt to preach the Gospel. If a minister of the Gospel, who is a real minister of the Gospel, in fact, would attempt to preach the Gospel in truth and in fact to any congregation of so-called religious world, in our cities today, a repetition of the scene that took place in Nazareth as to our Lord would occur again. A true minister of the Gospel would be driven out of any city in the civilized world today if he would attempt to preach the Gospel in any of the so-called churches of any of the so-called denominations that term themselves Christians.

The spirit was upon the Lord at Nazareth. He had overcome every thought and desire of carnality. There was not a lust thought within the consciousness of his pure soul. He had overcome the lust of the flesh and death, and was the "truth and the life." No woman could tempt him sexually. Mary Magdalene tried it, if sacred history and tradition can be believed. She was the Cleopatra of her age.

The officers of the Roman armies in Jerusalem and Judah were sexually wild after her, if tradition and sacred history can be believed. These army officers of the Roman army fell at her feet. She was the sex force among them, just as the sensual minded women of the "Courts" of the thrones of the earth are today, with kings, monarchs and commanders of armies. Woman with her sex force has always controlled the kingdoms



of the earth, because all human sentiment is founded on sensuality. Mary Magdalene, if sacred history and tradition can be believed, was one of those high class prostitutes that have always, and do today, grace the thrones of kings, and the palaces as "the first ladies of the land."

She heard of the man Jesus, and of his teachings. If sacred tradition and history can be believed, she boasted that this man of Nazareth, who was teaching these inhuman doctrines, would fall at her feet when she came in his presence. This is the pride of the carnal minded and first class prostitute of thrones and kings.

They love to see monarchs and lords fall at their feet. Mary Magdalene thought our Lord would fall at her feet. But when she came into his presence, her soul, which was saturated with sin, lust and death, cried out in despair. Instead of our Lord falling at her lustful feet, she fell at his gracious feet, praying for the salvation of her soul. He was so pure that his very presence melted her; he was so pure that his holy face was more than her sin cursed soul could resist. He granted her prayer and cast out of her lustful soul all sin. He cast "seven" devils out of her. "Seven" was the symbol of completeness. She was all sin. Women of the courts and thrones of all ages have been. She was all sin and the Savior forgave her sins and cleansed her soul from every lust thought and carnal desire. Hence, she was the last to leave the cross on which the Savior hung and the first at the sepulcher on the morning of his resurrection.

Mary Magdalene being the last to leave the cross and the first at the tomb on the morning of the resurrection represents a beautiful thought.

Her soul had been cleansed and purified. May we stay by the cross until the last thought of lust and sensuality has faded away in thought and consciousness from our souls. May we be the first at the tomb on the morning of the resurrection, when the day star of truth and spirit arises within our souls and awakens within us the new life, and makes all things new so we can behold God as our spiritual father, and be conscious of him and his presence through spiritual sense. That was a beautiful scene, as well as a sad scene, when Mary Magdalene and Mary, the Blessed Virgin and the Mother of our Lord, and the Sainly Apostle, John, returned from the cross. Their return from Calvary was sad, and yet sweet. But on the morning of the resurrection truth awakened within their souls and they understood it all. The resurrection is the day star of truth arising within our souls and casting out the night of darkness and sensuality from consciousness.

Our Savior rose "in the morning" as the day was dawning. This was symbolic. His resurrection meant light. It meant the day star of truth within the consciousness of the soul. It meant the morning of truth and of spirit banishing the night of error and lust. As the day dawns, darkness is banished. As the spirit arises within the soul, error is banished. As truth ascends within the consciousness of the soul, error, darkness and night and lust are banished from the consciousness of the soul. When the light of the resurrection morn dawns within the consciousness of the soul, it dispels from the consciousness of the soul the belief in the pleasure of the senses of the orgasm of the sex act. As the morning of the resurrection dawns within

the consciousness of the soul, every belief in the pleasure of the senses is banished from the consciousness of the soul and from thought. This is the true resurrection. It is the morning of light, the day of truth, and this is light to the soul. May we, as Mary Magdalene of old, stay by the tomb until the morning of the resurrection arises within our souls, then we shall be pure and the children of God.

The Savior was just as pure in the synagogue at Nazareth as he was the day that he cast the last thought of lust and sensuality out of the consciousness of the soul of Mary Magdalene. And it was His holy presence and purity of face that caused the sensual minded congregation of Nazareth to turn upon him, and to lead him out of the city to the brow of the hill, that they might throw him down the hill "headlong." He said the "spirit of the Lord was upon him" because He had anointed him to preach the Gospel to the poor. The Gospel is the new ideas of the Spirit, and the spiritual ideas of God taking the place of the carnal ideas of the lust of the flesh within the consciousness of the soul. He said that the Father had sent him to "heal the sick and recovering of sight to the blind, and set at liberty them that are bruised." "The broken hearted" are the hearts deep in lust and sensuality, and those that have not spiritual sight, are spiritually blind.

The "captives" are those that are in bondage to the lust of the flesh. "The bruised" are those that lust has cursed and ruined. They are all around us, eaten up with syphilis and diseased with gonorrhea, as the result of the original sin of lust. No doubt a vast majority of the congregation in



the synagogue at Nazareth to whom the Master was speaking, were diseased with "private diseases." They were "bruised" and men are bruised today, and men have been bruised in all ages, and will be bruised until the original sin of lust is overcome and the kingdom of purity and of spiritual life has been realized in thought and the kingdom of God is at hand.

The Author personally knew of a "broken hearted" woman once in his life that touched his heart. Her soul was deep in lust and sin. She was a white woman. She became deeply infatuated with a black negro man. She could not resist his presence. His very presence aroused the very depths of hell, lust and carnality within her. As he would come into her presence her soul would go into the depths of hell. She could not resist him. She would yield to him, and then she would go to herself, weep and moan. Her tears were pitiful after her soul had yielded to the gratification of the lust of this black man. I knew the cause. She did not know that I knew that she was hypnotized by this black man. But I did. She did not know that I knew that she was having sexual intercourse with him, but I did. She did not know that I knew the cause of her tears, but I did, and it was the most pitiful sight that I ever witnessed; yet when this black man would come back within her presence she would repeat the same act and go into the depths of hell again. And then the days of weeping, moaning and groaning and tears of sorrow would follow. She was of the "broken hearted" that the Master came to "heal," and for three years he walked up and down the hills of Galilee and Judah "healing" these "broken hearted," and casting out of their thoughts



and consciousness all lust desires and purifying their souls. He has been "healing" the "broken hearted" ever since the serpent deceived the first soul, and he will "heal" the "broken hearted" until the end of time; and all who are "healed" by him and have their souls purified from the lust of the flesh shall see him face to face and live and reign with him.

Suppose a man were a sure enough minister of the Gospel today, and should go into any congregation and preach the Gospel as Jesus preached it, what do you think would happen? There would be "noise" and "tumult," the "image of Adam" and "Seth" would appear and a stampede as there was at Nazareth when the Master preached the Gospel there. No doubt a large part of the congregation in the synagogue at Nazareth, in which the Master was preaching, was diseased of "private diseases." They were sensual in thought. They were in a state of carnality, hence they turned upon him and led him out of the city to cast him down the hill "headlong." That is exactly what would happen to a true minister of the Gospel today, if he would attempt to preach the Gospel as Jesus preached it.

If a man who had overcome sensuality himself, and had had his soul purified from lust, and had come into the spiritual ideas of God and the spiritual understanding of God, should occupy the pulpit and were to tell the congregation that there is not anything spiritual about the sex relations between husband and wife, and that all carnality is of Satan and spiritual death, and that carnality and lust must be overcome for their souls to be purified and to see God, he would be run out of the city. He would probably be killed. Jesus was crucified for

teaching this truth, and the age is so carnal today, and man has been in all ages since the serpent cursed the first soul, that the race would kill any man who would tell them the truth as to sin and point out the way of salvation. There are a few who would accept the truth.

A minister of the Gospel today would find a few who would accept the truth. A minister of the Gospel in all ages of the world will find a few who are "broken hearted," and want to be "healed" of lust, sin and death, and have their souls purified and to come into the consciousness of the spiritual ideas of God and live and reign with Him. But the race as a race is too deep in the thought of lust, the serpent has their souls, and they do not want to be emancipated from this bondage of sensuality and death. But there are a few ministers of the Gospel, there are a few only, who have overcome carnality and have the mind of the Christ. Most of those who claim to be ministers of the Gospel are ministers of the serpent. Most of those who have claimed to be the minister of the Gospel in all ages have been ministers of the serpent, and the most of those who shall claim to be the ministers of the Gospel to the end of time, will be ministers of the serpent.

They have preached death for life, and they will continue to preach death for life. They have taught that marriage is holy and a divine institution, notwithstanding the Master said, "He that looketh upon a woman to lust after her, hath committed adultery already in his heart." These are the "false prophets" of which the Master spoke. Their systems of theology are founded on sensuality. Their ecclesiastical systems are founded on

lust and the "Prince of this world." If they were preaching the Gospel, and telling men and women that they must surrender up everything that is carnal and overcome lust, and the mind of the serpent, before their souls can be purified and see God, they could not get money to build up their great financial systems of churchology and ecclesiasticism. The carnal mind hates all that is spiritual, and hates God. The carnal mind worships lust, and will give money for things that are lustful, but the carnal mind will not contribute to support that which is spiritual and holy.

"And they heard the voice of the Lord God, walking in the garden in the cool of the day, and Adam and his wife, hid themselves from the presence of the Lord God, amongst the trees of the garden. And the Lord God called unto Adam, and said unto him, where art thou? And he said, I heard thy voice in the garden and I was afraid, because I was naked and I hid myself, and he said, who told thee that thou wast naked? Hast thou eaten of the tree whereof I commanded thee that thou shouldst not eat? And the man said, the woman whom thou gavest to be with me, she gave me of the tree and I did eat. And the Lord God said unto the woman what is this that thou hast done? And the woman said, the serpent beguiled me and I did eat. And the Lord God said unto the serpent, because thou hast done this thou art cursed above all cattle, and above every beast of the field; upon thy belly shall thou go, and dust shalt thou eat all the days of thy life. And I will put enmity between thee and the woman and between thy seed and her seed. It shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise his heel. Unto the woman he said, I will greatly multiply thy sor-



row and thy conception in sorrow thou shalt bring forth children and thy desire shall be to thy husband and he shall rule over thee." Gen. 3:8-16.

The "Lord God" said this, and not God. The "Lord God" here is the material creation. It is the creation of the senses. It is the creation wherein "God" has banished the soul from the holy presence for having yielded to lust and sin, which is death. And this creation of the senses, with its carnality and lust, must be overcome by the soul in thought and consciousness for the soul to return to the presence of God and be in his spiritual image and live.

In Revelation, we are told, all who overcome this creation of the senses, as here recorded in Genesis, shall return to the Holy City, which is the spiritual "image" of God, and become the Sons of God. We are also told in Revelation that the souls who do not overcome this creation of the carnal senses are left in "outer darkness" spiritually. They are the murderers, the adulterers, the whore mongers, the liars, the sorcerers and the soothsayers. This creation here of the senses is the sex brain and it must be overcome for the soul to return to the image of God. In this creation of the senses, the woman is told that "her desire shall be unto her husband, and he shall rule over her." This is the sex creation.

In this sex creation, the female is the negative and the drawing force. The male is the positive and the aggressive force. "The desire" is a sex desire, and the submission is a sex submission, and the "dominion" is a sex dominion. The "dominion" given a man over woman, is a sex dominion, and she submits to him sexually. We see this daily. The whole desire of the female in this carnal state is to



attract the male. That is her first thought after she comes into puberty.

She adorns, she perfumes and she dresses for this purpose, and then after she has attracted the male, she submits to him sexually and her soul is cursed spiritually. Then she hates and despises the male. She feels that the serpent of the carnal senses has deceived her. and that the male has "de-filed" her body, and the serpent has cursed her soul. If the Gospel were to come into the consciousness of the race this law would be broken. If the souls of men and women were to overcome the carnal in thought and consciousness, and the mind of the serpent within their souls, they would come into the "spiritual image of the Father" and conceive spiritual ideas rather than carnal ideas; and this law of death which makes a female subject to the male sexually, would be broken. The Gospel within the consciousness of the soul frees the soul of the female from the carnal bondage of the male.

The woman is told that her "sorrow" would be greatly multiplied and that she should conceive in sorrow and bring forth children as the result of having yielded to the serpent. This curse placed upon the woman for having yielded to lust is the mind of fallen spirits. Every woman who becomes a Christian and overcomes the mind of the serpent, lust and carnality and comes into the Christ mind, is liberated from this curse and bondage of death.

Christian women are not under this "curse." They have been liberated from this law of lust and death. A Christian is one who has overcome sensuality. Jesus became the Christ when he overcame sensuality, and none are Christians, except those who have overcome sensuality. Christians do

not conceive carnally. Only pagans and sex worshippers conceive carnally, and, therefore, the "image" of the serpent is within the consciousness of their offspring, and hence, the necessity for the new and spiritual birth for all that is conceived here carnally, before they can see God. All this creation is carnally conceived, and is of paganism and sex worship. If all the race would become Christians at one time, that would end this Satanic age and end carnal propogation, and the Kingdom of God would be at hand.

The Blessed Virgin overcame all that was carnal and conceived spiritually; she had no shame, neither did the Master, who was spiritually conceived. They "stripped" him "nude" before Pilot, but he was not "ashamed;" there was no "shame" within the consciousness of his soul. He was not "ashamed" of his generative organs. for there was no lust and sin there. If all men were as pure as he, they would not be ashamed of their generative organs, and they would have no carnal desire for the opposite sex, and they would not beget carnally and the Kingdom of God would be at hand.

Hence, our Lord said, "The children of this world marry and are given in marriage, but the children of that world and those who are accounted worthy of the resurrection neither marry nor are given in marriage, but are equal to the angels, being the children of the resurrection and the children of God." They marry because they are the children of this world, that is, they are under the law of the serpent, which is lust and the original sin.

The woman is subject unto the man as the result of lust and the original sin. The man has dominion over her sexually as the result of lust and

the original sin. She conceives in "sorrow" and brings forth children as the result of lust and the original sin. This is the law of Gen. 3:16. It is the law of the serpent.

Our Master says, when they have overcome lust and the law of the serpent, they have overcome the law of sex dominion and sex subjection as laid down in Gen. 3:16, and neither "marry nor are given in marriage." They are Christians. When two people marry, they thereby say to the world that they are carnal; they say to the world that the serpent has control of their souls, that they are in "bondage" to the lust of the flesh, and that they intend to gratify that lust and to yield to the mind of the serpent. That they intend to go under the law of death. The woman thereby says that she is willing to be subject to the man sexually, and to conceive in "sorrow." She says she is willing to undergo the pangs of childbirth in order to have her carnal senses gratified. She thereby says that she is willing to "defile" her body and have it torn and shattered in order to gratify her carnal senses. She thereby declares that she is willing to have her body "defiled," which is the temple of the living God, and of her soul, in order to gratify her lust desire for the carnal senses.

And the man thereby says that he is willing to "defile" her body and "curse" her soul in order to gratify his carnal appetites. He does not love her, but he lusts for her. He does not love her; if he did he would not "defile" her body in order to gratify his carnal lust and sexual appetites. Love is of the soul. Lust is of the serpent and the sex brain. Love is of heaven. Lust is of hell. Love is of God; lust is of the devil.

## CHAPTER VIII.

“And the Lord God said unto the serpent, because thou hast done this thou art cursed above all cattle and above every beast of the field; upon thy belly shalt thou go, and dust shalt thou eat all the days of thy life. And I will put enmity between thee and the woman and between thy seed and her seed; it shall bruise thy head and thou shalt bruise his heel.” Gen. 3:14-15.

Everything in nature is symbolic. The serpent is symbolic of poison of the carnal mind. The serpent is symbolic of lust. The “earth” is the carnal man. The “earth” is the man of lust and sensuality. It is the creation of the senses. It is the creation of the “Lord God.” The serpent is the symbol of the lust of this creation of the carnal senses. The serpent is the symbol of the thoughts and desires of the sex brain. The thoughts and desires of the sex brain are low and degrading.

They are the thoughts that builded the “Tower of Babel” and caused the “confusion of tongues.” The language which constructed the “Tower of Babel” is the language of sex passion. The thought that constructed the cities of Babylon, Sodom and Gomorrah is the thought of sex lust. Every man and woman, until he or she overcomes the serpent, has the “Tower of Babel” and the cities of Babylon, Sodom and Gomorrah within his or her own sex consciousness.

This thought of the sex brain is “low” and of the “earth,” and this is the “earth” upon which the



serpent crawls. The serpent lives and has his being within the thoughts of the sex brain. The thoughts of this serpent, which are lust, poison us both body and mind, and produces directly or indirectly the diseases of the human race, and finally damns the soul spiritually, unless lust is finally overcome. The "enmity" between the soul of the woman and the serpent is uncompromising. The "enmity" between the soul and carnality is the battle between life and death. The battle between the "seed of the serpent" and the "seed of the woman" is uncompromising. The "seed of the serpent" is carnal lust and carnal desires. The "seed of the woman" is spiritual thoughts and soul desires. The "seed of the serpent" is the senses. The "seed of the soul" is spiritual. The "seed of the serpent" is the creation of the "Lord God." It is the soul banished from the presence of God in thought and consciousness into carnal consciousness and carnal thoughts. The "seed of the soul" is the creation of "God." It is the soul in God's "image," thinking holy thoughts and with spiritual desires.

The Christ who was spiritually conceived was the "seed of the soul." Carnal conception is the "seed of the serpent." This desire to conceive carnally is always fixed within the soul of woman, until she overcomes the mind of the serpent and the lust of the flesh.

I personally have talked and conversed with a high class, educated gentleman who has traveled all through the Orient. He tells me that in Japan he saw with his own eyes pagan priests marching in their robes with the generative organs of the male raised high, and hundreds of Japanese girls following them in procession, paying homage to the

generative organs of the male which were elevated high for these girls as they marched in procession to behold. And that every time the pagan priest turned and bowed toward the girls and lowered the generative organs of the male that this great procession of maidens would fall to the ground, paying homage and reverence to this god of the sex worship.

They paid homage to this god of the sex worship because it was written within their souls. Their desires were carnal desires. They desired to bring forth children carnally. It has been written in the soul of every woman since the fall. This same gentleman tells me that in China he visited the pagan temples and pagan shrines and there he saw the maidens and barren women go to these pagan temples and pagan shrines where stood statues of men and bow and kiss the generative organs on the statue of the male. He said that this performance of sex worship was continued until some of the generative organs on the statues were worn away.

These pagan maidens and barren women by paying this homage to the generative organs of this pagan god thought that they could conceive and bare children. This desire, which is in every woman, is placed there by the mind of the serpent. It is the mind of fallen spirits, whom God cast out of his presence for having sinned and conceived sex lust in their consciousness.

A reputable gentleman, who is a brother lawyer and scholar and who has traveled extensively, tells me that he has seen in the remains of ancient cities the evidence of this same truth. That in the ancient world where they have dug up the ancient

cities that they have found the generative organs of the male at the altar, where they were worshipped by the female. That he saw these organs with his own eyes. They were the remains of the pagan worship of ancient races. This law is everywhere in nature and in this fallen race, and we have it with us today, posing as current Christianity. Sex permeates the so-called Christian system of today. Moses recorded it in Genesis. It is clear to those who understand nature and the spiritual law of the Bible.

If there is anything that a woman hates, it is a snake; inately, she is conscious that the snake is the symbol of that thought which is the enemy of her soul. Some American gentlemen, who were traveling in South America, were out strolling one day. Ahead of them they heard a woman screaming for her life. As they approached her they saw her hands uplifted and heard her scream as if though she was on fire. She seemed to be fastened to the earth and could not move her feet. As they approached nearer to her, they saw one of those great reptile snakes of South America approaching her. He had his eyes fixed upon her eyes and her eyes were fixed on his eyes. She could not take her eyes from his and he would not take his eyes from hers. He had her hypnotized and was approaching her. She knew he was coming, but she was so hypnotized by his eyes that she could not move. Her mind was paralyzed with the look of his eyes. The gentlemen heard her and got there before the snake got to the woman. They killed the snake, but the woman went crazy. Her mind never came out from under the spell that he had fixed upon her.



Mentally she never came from under his hypnotic influence.

A reputable gentleman, who knew of these facts personally and who knew some of the men in the party that witnessed the facts and helped kill the snake, told me of this occurrence in person. The law of thought that caused this woman to be hypnotized and to lose her mind is recorded by Moses in Genesis, and is all through the Bible. The serpent within the woman is daily being hypnotized by the serpent within the man; and many a woman daily goes under the hypnotism of this spell of lust and indulges the gratification of the serpent mind and never comes out from under this spell, and finally goes to the insane asylums. The insane asylums are filled with inmates who are sent there through this law of the serpent. These inmates of asylums have the "image of the beast" fixed in their minds as the result of sex hypnotism and cannot come out from under it. They are insane.

The Psalmist expresses the spiritual idea of the soul when he said, "By the rivers of Babylon there we sat down, yea we wept, when we remembered Zion." 137th Psalm, 1st verse. Babylon is the city of carnal senses and the city of the state of carnal thought. Zion is the city of soul purity and the city of spiritual sense in thought. We have all gone into Babylon and remembered Zion. David was there and he wept when he remembered Zion, and he said, "We hanged our harps upon the willows in the midst thereof. For there they that carried us away captive required of us a song; and that wasted us, required of us mirth, saying, sing us one of the songs of Zion. How shall we sing



the Lord's song, in a strange land?" 137th Psalm, 2-4.

David had gone away into the city of the carnal senses. In that land he was a stranger. He was not in the city of Zion. He could not sing the Lord's song in this land of the carnal senses. And neither can we sing the songs of Zion when we are in the strange land of the carnal senses in thought. If we would sing the songs of Zion, we must return to the land of spiritual ideas and soul sense in thought, and there we will "hang our harps upon the willows of Zion" and make a glad noise. There in the land of spiritual thoughts we will hang our harps upon the willows of Zion and attune our harps to spiritual notes, which is the music of the spiritual ideas of God. As the morning of the resurrection dawns within our souls, we hang our harps upon the willows of Zion and sing a song unto the Lord. As the morning of the resurrection dawns within our souls the city of Jerico, which was the city of the carnal senses, "falls" and we march on toward the land of Canaan into spiritual understanding.

As the day star of truth and the morning of the resurrection dawns within our souls the carnal senses of the Red Sea roll back and we pass out of the land of Egypt, which is the land of carnality, over dry land to spiritual understanding. As the morning of the Resurrection dawns within our souls we walk within the fiery furnace of the lust senses without harm and within the lions' den of sensuality without being destroyed. As the morning of the Resurrection dawns within our souls these powers of carnality become as nothing to us. As the morning of the Resurrection dawns within our

souls, we rise above the carnal and the night of darkness in thought and consciousness and ascend into heaven and see with spiritual vision and understand with spiritual discernment and behold God with the spiritual eyes of the soul, as perfect and holy.

The mouth of the womb of the woman is a facsimile of the mouth of the snake; and the mouth of the womb goes through the same pulsation during the sex act that the snake's mouth does when he generates poison and throws his fangs into other flesh to kill it. The generative organs of the female is the seat of lust and the drawing force that controls the law of the serpent of the universe. And within her generative organs, the diseases that afflict the race have their origin. The generative organs of the purest woman are unclean, hence, the holy Scripture says: "How can anything clean come out of the unclean?" And the viler they are in thought, the more unclean are the generative organs. Therein are conceived the origin of syphilis and gonorrhoea and leprosy which afflict with disease the human race. Therein are conceived insanity which fills the insane asylums.

The male is not pure, but the physical condition of his generative organs prevent them from being the origin of disease. He can contract disease, but private diseases have their origin within the female. In her sex thought was conceived original sin and the law of the serpent is upon her. Woman in her purity is purer than a man; but innately she is more degraded; hence, she can fall lower than the man. I never found but one woman who was honest enough to admit this. She said

to me: "Mr. Tapp, human beings cannot fall lower than they innately are. A woman can fall lower than a man; therefore, she is innately more depraved." I said to her: "You are the first woman that I ever found who was honest enough to admit the truth of the Bible, and the truth of nature." This is the law as recorded in the Bible, and it is the law of nature.

When women shall have overcome the mind of the serpent then the law of Genesis 3:15 will be abolished from consciousness. The blessed Virgin Mary overcame the law of Genesis 3:15, and abolished every thought and desire of lust and the serpent from the consciousness of her soul and conceived our Lord spiritually. She had no fear of the serpent and the dragon had no power over her, and if sacred history and tradition can be believed, her body never suffered "corruption." It was translated, if sacred tradition and sacred history can be believed.

The Catholic church today holds, and has for centuries, held a feast day annually in memory of the day when her holy body was translated. The "princes of the church" know that all sin is within the sex. In the Catholic church married women do not decorate the altar, they have been through carnality. The altar is holy, hence, the unmarried women decorate the altar. The altar is within every man and woman as he or she overcomes sex lust. "Altar" has three meanings, it means to sacrifice, to elevate, and to commune. It means to sacrifice, kill and to give up, and to surrender the mind of the serpent within the consciousness of the soul. It means to surrender and to kill every carnal desire within the conscious-



ness of the soul, and to elevate the soul in thought to that holy state of consciousness wherein it conceives only spiritual thoughts and ideas and thinks spiritual thoughts, and then the soul communes with God. This is the true altar.

Noah erected an altar to God. Abraham, Isaac and Jacob erected altars to God. The Patriarchs erected altars to God, and every saint erects an altar to God. "Noah found grace in the eyes of the Lord." Noah found grace, that is, spiritual understanding and knew God spiritually because he conquered the carnal and the mind of the serpent and elevated his soul in thought until he saw God with the spiritual eyes of his soul, and communed with God as spirit through the spiritual senses. "And the Lord appeared unto Abraham, and said, Unto thy seed will I give this land: and there builded he an altar unto the Lord, who appeared unto him." Gen. 12:7. All who come into spiritual communion with God build an altar to God.

"It was imputed to Abraham for righteousness." "Righteousness" is soul and spiritual thoughts. "The Righteous" soul is the soul that has mastered the mind of the serpent and conquered carnality, and thinks only spiritual ideas and spiritual thoughts. Such a soul communes spiritually with God and erects a true altar to God.

Isaac was offered up by Abraham. This was the carnal within Abraham that was offered up. He mastered the carnal and walked with God in spirit and truth. Jacob wrestled with the flesh until he conquered the mind of the serpent and had dominion over the lust of the flesh and communed with God and beheld the angels of God.



He saw spiritually. His vision was spiritual. This was Jacob's true altar. All who conquer the serpent, and have dominion over the lust of the flesh until they can conceive only spiritual ideas and commune with God through spiritual sense, erect altars to God. "This is the Kingdom of Heaven" that the Master said is within you.

The Kingdom of Heaven is within every man and woman who erects a true altar to God, and conquers the lust of the flesh and communes with God spiritually, and knows God as spirit through spiritual sense.

Noah and the patriarchs burned incense "at the altar." Incense means to purify. It is symbolic of burning up all that is impure. Carnal thoughts and desires are impure, and all who overcome the carnal and come into spiritual understanding and worship God spiritually as the Father of spirits, are burning true "incense at the altar." The Catholic church burns "incense at the altar." That is symbolic of the burning up and destroying the lust of the flesh. It is symbolic of destroying the serpent's mind within the consciousness of the soul and purifying the soul spiritually.

In the Catholic church they have the Society of St. Mary, which is named after the blessed Virgin. Girls can belong to this society until they get married. Then they are excluded. Then they go into carnality. As long as they remain virgins they can belong to this Society of St. Mary. The Blessed Virgin burned true incense and erected the true altar, for she overcame all carnality and the mind of the serpent completely, and conceived our blessed Lord spiritually. In the Catholic church they have the Society of the Angels. Little girls

up to puberty can belong to this society. But at puberty they are excluded. The serpent then begins to unfold into their minds and they become impure in thought, hence, they cannot belong to the Society of Angels. Angels are holy. They are spiritual beings and non-carnal in nature and thought.

In the Catholic church the "Actalite" boys who light the candles of the altar are under puberty. The serpent has not begun to unfold into their consciousness. The candles which burn on the altar are emblematic of the light and life of our blessed Master who lived the holy life and who overcame the carnal and the serpent and through his holy life imparts to us the holy spirit and who is the Comforter and who quickens our dead souls and eradicates therefrom every carnal desire that we may walk in the light of spiritual truth. Hence, these lights are lighted by boys under puberty. In the Catholic church at puberty, boys and girls are required to go to confession. There the priests warn them against "masturbation," and sex indulgence. He becomes their spiritual father to protect them against the serpent.

The men who run the Vatican know it is all a question of sex. They know that the "Fall" was lust. It is the duty of every father to protect his child against "self abuse" and immorality, hence, the priest is called "father" and the "Pope" is called "holy father."

The word "Pope" comes from papa. That is, he is the supreme protector of the race from the mind of the serpent, and his duty is to guide the race in all things, so as to lead them out of lust and carnality. "The princes" of the "church" under-

stand the idea; but they do not give it out to the masses of people. The whole purpose of the Roman Catholic church is to govern the sex question in the confession. The whole duty of the priest is to prevent the race from practicing "self abuse" and from over indulgence sexually; and to abstain from carnal indulgence except under the married relations. They know that marriage is not holy. They know it is carnal. Hence, when the married woman gives birth to the child she is "churched" in the Catholic church. She has been through carnality. She must be made to do penance.

The Catholic church took marriage into the church and made it a sacrament of the church so as to regulate the sex question. But they know that men and women must overcome that which makes them marry to ever come into a true church and the kingdom of God. But they do not preach these things to the masses of the people. They keep these cardinal truths of christianity within the secret bosom of the priesthood. And that is the reason the Catholic church has stood through the centuries.

But the Protestant clergy doesn't seem to have any conception of the sex question, as the original sin, and the meaning of the Bible. They do not seem to have any conception as to what constitutes the Gospel. They do not seem to understand that the Gospel is spiritually overcomnig lust and carnality and the souls coming into the consciousness of the spiritual senses of God, and the spiritual ideas of God. With them religion is a matter of sex emotion. The well sexed minister, young and virile, is always the best minister. He appeals to the sex sense of his audience. He creates sex emo-



tion and they take this for religion, and go to sleep in the senses as Adam did when Eve was made.

The traveling evangelist of the Protestant world is always the well sexed man, in the full vigor of his sex powers. That is the reason the women flock to the revivals. These well sexed men, young and virile, appeal to the sex senses of the women. They are unconscious why they go; but it is all recorded in Genesis by Moses, and it is throughout the Bible. These virile and well sexed men, by appealing to their senses move the sex forces within them. An old man, worn out sexually, never makes a good evangelist. He does not appeal to the senses.

To illustrate what I mean, nine months after a revival has been held in any community by a virile and well sexed minister, there will always be more children born than there were nine months before the revival. The virile and well sexed evangelist in his preaching has stirred up the sex emotions of the women of his congregation, and they conceive and bear children as the result. This is sex worship. Christianity is the opposite.

"The Lord is in his house, let all the earth be still." The "earth" here is the same earth in Genesis that man was told to subdue and have dominion over. The "earth" is the carnal and lust senses of the sex brain. God is Spirit. God is Mind, and God is everywhere, and his "house" is that state of spiritual thought wherein the soul has silenced the noise of the sex senses in thought, and communes with God. As the soul silences the noise of the sex senses in consciousness the soul comes into the "house" of God. "Let all on earth be still," that is, let every carnal thought be driven out of



consciousness and every carnal desire fade away, and let the soul come into spiritual communion with God. This is Christianity.

For the soul to become Christian, all "the earth must be still." Every thought of the flesh must be surrendered, and all the noise of the carnal senses must cease, for the soul to commune with God. The noise of the carnal senses is the "earth." The noise of the carnal senses and the noise of the sex brain are paganism and heathenism.

The Christian minister is one who has silenced the noise of the "earth" and made "all the earth be still." He has conquered the lust of the flesh and overcome the senses in thought and his soul communes with God through spiritual sense and conceives spiritual ideas, and through spiritual union and communication he conveys these ideas to the souls of others, and casts out of their consciousness all thoughts and desires of the serpent, and the lust of the flesh. This is what Jesus did, and "healed them everywhere."

"And unto Adam he said, because thou hast harkened unto the voice of thy wife and hast eaten of the tree of which I commanded thee, saying, thou shalt not eat of it, cursed is the ground for thy sake; in sorrow shalt thou eat of it all the days of thy life; thorns also and thistles shall it bring forth to thee; \* \* \* and thou shalt eat bread, till thou return unto the ground, for out of it wast thou taken, for dust thou art and unto dust thou shalt return." Gen. 3:17-19.

This is the Adamic creation. It is the creation of the senses. It is the creation of the "Lord God." And it is the creation into which the soul, or the man made in God's image was turned

out as the result of having conceived sex lust. It is the creation into which the soul is banished in thought and consciousness from the presence of God. Had the soul which was the man made in God's "image" subdued and overcome this Adamic creation, the man made in God's "image" and who is spirit, would have been translated without physical death, as was Enoch, Elijah, Moses and our Lord when he ascended. Had the man who was spirit "subdued" and "overcome" this creation of the senses which is the earthly creation, he would not have returned to dust, but would have been translated from the material creation. He would not have been subject to physical death.

Man suffers physical death and is not translated from this physical creation of the senses as the result of his carnal state of thought. At the general resurrection, the general translation, all who have overcome the carnal creation of the senses are translated completely from it in thought and consciousness—then the "earth," the lust of the flesh, is completely "subdued" and "overcome."

This is the spiritual body. "And Adam called his wife's name Eve, because she was the mother of all living." Eve is from the Hebrew word meaning the mother of all the "earth," that is, the mother of all that is carnal and material. Every woman is an Eve. Adam comes from the Hebrew word, Adamah, meaning "earth" or "earthly." Every man in his carnal nature is an Adam. The male and female of the carnal creation only beget and conceive the carnal and material offspring. Every male and female is an Adam and an Eve. They are material and carnal beings. They are the "dust" and they only beget and conceive carnal

and material offspring of the "dust." They are mud and their "offspring is mud." They are Cain and they are in the land of Nod, that is, in the land of the senses, and they bring forth their offspring of "mud and clay" and name them after the ideas of their own carnal minds, and worship them as gods. This offspring of "mud and clay" is the product of the sex brain and the sex brain names the offspring of "mud and clay" and worships the offsprings as idols.

Every babe in the arms of the mother is an idol, but in due course of time both parent and offspring of "mud and clay" return to the cities of "mud and clay." God is the father of spirits, and of all that is real and eternal. The ties of earthly kin are all of the serpent. They are idols. When we have overcome these idols in thought, we overcome death. When we shall have overcome all carnal ties, we shall realize God spiritually and be the children of God.

Those idols of earthly ties do not last as a rule, beyond three generations. In the fourth generation they become weak. Heaven is the state of spiritual thought, and in this state of spiritual thought the soul is unconscious of the senses and all that is material. Human ties do not prevail there. The laws of natural kin and the mesmerism of the sex mind do not prevail there.

"And the Lord God said, behold the man is become as one of us. to know good and evil, and now lest he put forth his hand and take also of the tree of life and eat and live forever; therefore, the Lord God sent him forth from the Garden of Eden to till the ground from whence he was taken. So he drove out the man and he placed at the east of



the Garden of Eden, Cherubims, and a flaming sword which turned every way to keep the way of the tree of life." Gen. 3:22-24.

The creation into which man went when he was turned out of Eden was the creation of the "Lord God." Eden was the creation of "God." Eden is "Paradise." It is the state of the spiritual existence of the soul made in God's "image." The "tree of life" was the Christ. The Christ was in the image of his Father, and is the image of his Father. He came here spiritually conceived and became incarnate and was subject to all the temptations of the lust of the flesh and retained the image of the Father, and returned to Paradise the holy Son of God. He is there now as the "Tree of life" for the "Healing of the nations" "bowed down" to the gods of lust. The creation of the "Lord God" here is the creation of the senses into which God banished man when he fell.

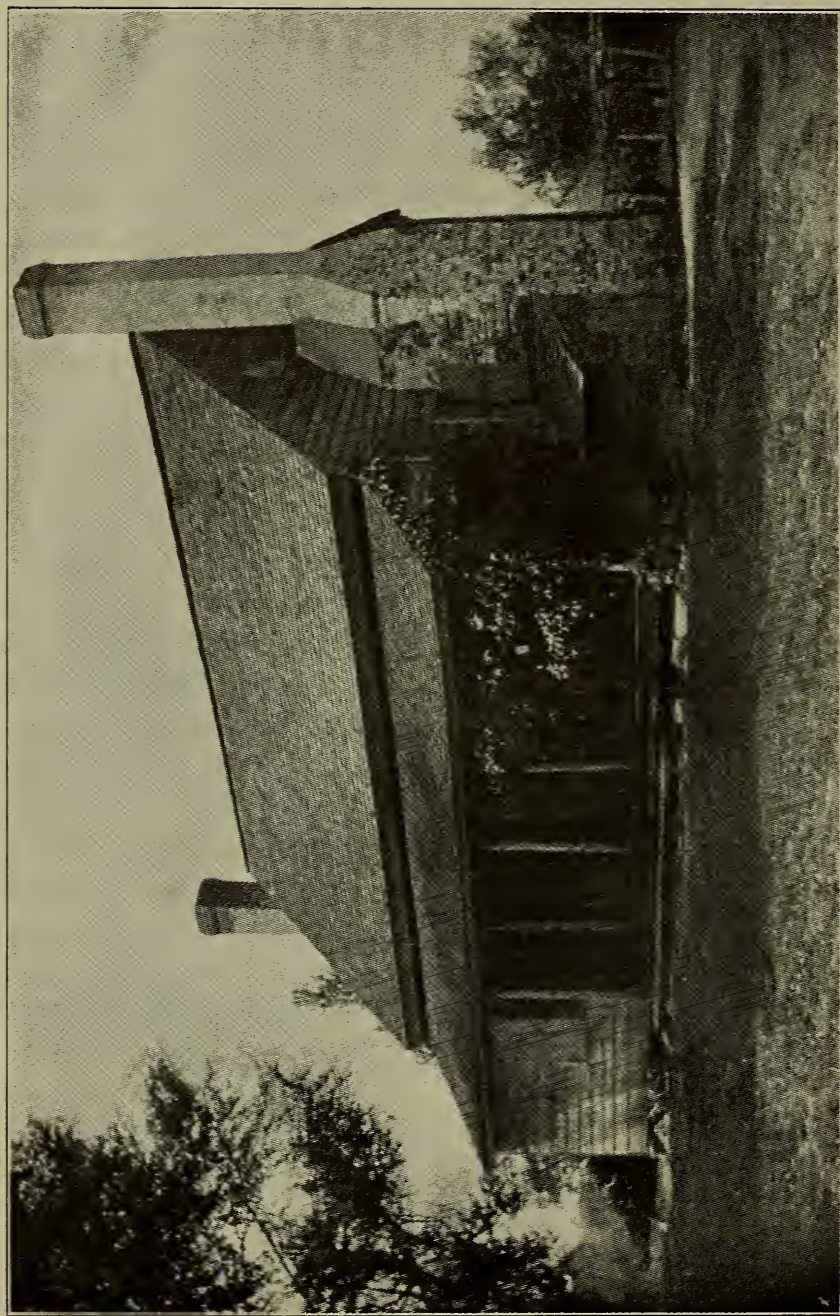
It is the creation of the fallen spirits whom God has banished from his Holy presence as the result of sin. Eden is the holy state of the holy angels and we shall be like them and "equal unto them," says our Lord, when we shall have been resurrected from the death sting of the serpent and lust, and "neither marry nor are given in marriage" any more. Then we shall be the "children of God and equal unto the angels and can die no more."

Man was sent into this creation of the senses in thought and consciousness as the result of lust. "Cherubims" mean messengers. And messengers are thoughts or ideas. The cherubims that the "Lord God" placed at the gate of Eden were carnal thoughts and carnal desires flowing into the con-



sciousness of the soul. They keep the soul out of Eden, and from a holy state of consciousness. They are the serpent's mind. They are the ideas and carnal thoughts of fallen spirits. They flow into the consciousness of the soul as spiritual death. They are the "flaming sword" which turns every way to keep us every moment from the "tree of life," that is, to keep us from the holy state of consciousness, of a holy and spiritual life.

This flaming sword is the thoughts and ideas of the sex brain, flowing into the consciousness of the soul every moment as spiritual death. Those who do not overcome it remain in outer darkness. They never return to the holy city which is Paradise. In Revelation St. John tells us of their fate. They are the "whoremongers," "adulterers," "liars," "sorcerers" and "murderers," and they are in outer darkness. These carnal thoughts of the lust of the flesh flow into their consciousness as the "lake of fire and brimstone," which is never quenched. This is hell. It is the hell that Jesus preached and it is the hell of the Bible. All who overcome the "flaming sword," that is, lust, return to the holy city and are liberated from the bondage of sensuality and the death sting of the serpent and are the children of God. They are in his holy presence and are in his image in mind and thought.



HOUSE NEAR HILLSBORO, ORANGE COUNTY, N. C., WHERE RUFFIN R. TAPP, FATHER OF  
SIDNEY C. TAPP WAS BORN.

## CHAPTER IX.

“And Adam knew his wife and she conceived and bare Cain.” Gen 4:1. Here is where mortal propogation begins, when man made in the “image” of God, yielded to lust. the ideas and thoughts of the sex brain of the Adamic creation flowed into the consciousness of the soul and man begot and conceived his mortal offspring. He left Eden when he began to propogate his mortal offspring. As long as he remained in Eden, that is, the state of spiritual consciousness and in the spiritual image of the Father, he did not propogate a mortal offspring. Man did not loose the spiritual image of the Father, and did not die until he yielded to lust. The carnal thoughts of the sex brain did not flow into his consciousness as a “flaming sword,” and spiritual death, until he yielded to lust.

When he yielded to lust, the carnal thoughts of the sex brain flowed into his soul as spiritual death and he died spiritually and left Paradise in thought, and propogated a mortal offspring. Every time a man and woman indulge sexually they leave Eden and Paradise and die spiritually, and the cherubims of carnal thoughts and the “flaming sword” of carnal ideas flow into the consciousness of their souls as spiritual death. When they shall overcome the cherubims of carnal thoughts and the carnal ideas and the “flaming sword” of lust, they will cease to indulge sexually and to propogate mortal offspring, and return to Eden and to the image of the Father and live as the children of God.



Here we have the "flaming sword" and the Cherubims which are carnal ideas and carnal thoughts that turned man out of Eden and produced spiritual death. Later on in the Bible when God commanded Moses to build the tabernacle and erect an altar, he commanded Moses to place over the altar and the Mercy seat, cherubims. The Mercy seat of the altar is emblematic of the grace of God, flowing into our souls and redeeming them from the carnal death of the serpent. We are only saved through God's mercy and through God's grace. The cherubims over the altar are emblematic of God's ideas flowing into our souls and taking the place of the carnal ideas of the serpent. They are emblematic of the holy spirit quickening our souls from the sleep of carnality. When the spiritual ideas of the divine mind flows into our soul as life, the carnal ideas of the serpent flee as death.

As we come into the consciousness, the cherubims at the altar—that is—as we come into the consciousness of spiritual ideas, we overcome the cherubims that turned man out of Eden. That is, we overcome carnal thoughts and carnal ideas. The cherubims over the altar are the spiritual ideas of God. The cherubims that turned man out of Eden are the carnal ideas of the serpent. When we shall have overcome the cherubims that turned man out of Eden, that is, lust and carnality, we will come into the understanding of the cherubims over the altar, which are spirituality and spiritual life.

When we shall have overcome the "beast," that is, the ideas of carnality, we shall come into the spiritual understanding of the Father. When we



shall have overcome the "image of the beast," which is the ideas of carnality, we will come into the "image of the Father" which is spiritual in its nature and spiritual in its thoughts. The "image" of the Father is spiritual ideas. When the soul shall understand spiritually, and conceive spiritually, and see spiritually, it will know the Father.

The "image of the beast" is carnal depravity and spiritual death. The "image of the beast" runs all through the animal life. The lower animal creation will become jealous sexually of a man or of a woman; and man can descend so low and become so degraded as to be jealous of the opposite sex of the lower animal creation.

Civil and common law has named adultery as the sex relation between a married and an unmarried person. But this is not the Biblical and spiritual meaning of adultery. None but adults can commit adultery. Adultery means to mix and be "contaminated with extraneous matter." At the age of puberty, adultery begins within the consciousness of the soul. At this age carnal thoughts begin to flow into the consciousness of the soul as spiritual death, and the soul becomes "polluted" with carnality. At this age the soul becomes "adulterated" with the lust of the flesh. These carnal thoughts and lust desires are the "flaming sword" and the "cherubims" that were placed at Eden to keep man from partaking of the "tree of life and living forever."

At puberty, the soul comes into the consciousness of sin, lust and death. At this age, our Lord said in the temple at Jerusalem "that He must be about His Father's business" and he was about His Father's business until thirty years of age when he

overcame the carnal. Our Lord said that "he that looketh upon a woman to lust after her has committed adultery already within his heart." Adultery is carnal thoughts as well as carnal acts, and the soul must become liberated from lust in thought to know God.

Civil and common law have defined "fornication" as the sexual relation between a married and unmarried person and between two unmarried persons. This is not the true and Biblical meaning of fornication. It is only a human standard fixed by man. The true and Biblical meaning of fornication is sexual indulgence with any other than the husband or wife. It includes incest and the sexual indulgence with the lower animal creation. This is what was being practiced in Sodom and Gomorrah; "even as Sodom and Gomorrah and the cities about them in like manner giving themselves over to fornication and going after strange flesh are set forth for an example, suffering the vengeance of eternal fire." Jude 7.

The words "strange flesh," here in Greek mean "other flesh;" it was the flesh of the lower animal creation. Men and women were so deep in lust and so degraded that they were gratifying the lust of the flesh by indulging the sexual relations with the lower animal creation in the days of Sodom and Gomorrah, and this was "fornication," and we have Sodom and Gomorrah with us today and have had in all ages; and Sodom and Gomorrah will be with the race until the race forsakes Satan and the lust of the flesh and seeks the Christ mind as the salvation of their souls. Only the Christ in the consciousness of the soul will free the soul from the lust of the flesh and spiritual death.

“But these, as natural brute beasts made to be taken and destroyed, speak evil of the things that they understand not, and shall utterly perish in their own corruption.” Second Peter 2:12. Here St. Peter declares that those who reach that degree of degredation so as to indulge the sex relation with the lower animal creation, are as “brute beasts,” and shall “perish” in their “own corruption.” It is the soul going into the lowest degree of spiritual darkness and death. Man who was made in “God’s image” was given “dominion” over the lower animal creation, and this “dominion” was a spiritual dominion.

Man was made in the spiritual and moral “image of God;” but the lower animal creation was not made in the image of God. And when man falls so low as to indulge the sex relations with the lower animal creation, he goes into the lowest state of degredation and his soul loses the spiritual image of God. It is the most degrading thought of the human soul. Parents should teach their children, as they come into the “evil days,” this spiritual truth.

Many a young boy and young girl during the age of puberty have committed this awful offense through ignorance. When the “evil days” come, the young have to contend with much. The parents at this critical age should take the young into their confidence and guide them through the “evil days” into mature judgment. Parents should warn the young as they come into the “evil days” against the awful offense of “self abuse.” Many a life has been ruined through ignorance during these days of indiscretion. Every father should be a “father confessor” for his son; and every mother a priestess



for her daughter; and the "confession" should be in every home.

The insane asylums are filled and have been in all ages because the young have not been instructed in the "evil days." In the Catholic homes for young girls and young boys they are watched. In the homes for young girls they are required to sleep with their hands from under the cover and there are sisters on guard at all hours of the night who make their visits through the bedrooms at all hours of the night to see that the hands of these girls during these "evil" and tender years are kept on the outside of the cover during the night. This is to keep these girls during these immature years, when the "evil one" is working at the consciousness of their souls, from committing "self abuse." The same care is exercised over young boys in the Catholic home for boys.

The priests know it is all a matter of sex. The "princes" of the church at the vatican know this; hence they direct the priesthood to see that all care be exercised to control the evil of the sex. A sister, before she becomes a sister in the Catholic church, has her "hair cut by the priest." Hair is the symbol of sensuality. The woman with a luxurious suit of hair is the well sexed woman and she attracts men.

Every woman desires a luxurious suit of hair; she may not know why but instinctively she knows it is her power over men. Every female, as she comes into puberty, desires luxurious hair; instinctively the lust of the flesh tells her that this gives her power to attract men. The beauty parlors of the world live on this idea. The days of the "evil one" is the dangerous age in every life. It is the

critical age in every human being. St. John therefore says, "I write unto you, young men, because you have overcome the "wicked one." First John 1:13. Again he says, "I have written unto you young men because you are strong, and the word of God abideth in you and you have overcome the "wicked one." First John 1:14. The saintly apostle knew that "evil" and the "wicked one" was lust. He knew that at the age of puberty this "wicked one" knocks at the door of every soul as spiritual death; he knew that the carnal and lust thoughts of the sex brain going into the consciousness of the soul is spiritual death. He knew that all lust of the flesh is the Satanic mind. He had gone through the temptation of the lust of the flesh himself. He had never married.

He was a virgin when the master called him, and he remained a virgin. He was the purest of all the apostles and hence he was the apostle that the Master loved best. He was more spiritual than the others, and hence, could understand the Master better. In old age he writes this advice to young men; he says they are "strong" and the "word of God abideth in them, and they have overcome the wicked one," and hence he writes unto them.

"The Word of God," will overcome the "wicked one." "The Word of God" is the non-sensual mind; it is the spiritual ideas of God. It is the soul living within the spiritual consciousness of God. He that hath the "Word of God," has the mind of God. He has a mind that is non-carnal and non-lustful in thought. He that hath the "word of God" has eternal life, because he has overcome carnality and death. The "wicked one" that is the idea of lust and carnality, cannot abide within the soul. when

the "word of God," that is, the spiritual ideas of God, abideth within the soul.

The "accepting of the Christ as your personal Savior," is the overcoming of lust and carnality, and the coming into the Christ mind. It is the soul coming into the spiritual consciousness of God. It is the soul conceiving the spiritual ideas of God in consciousness.

The soul that has overcome lust and sensuality in thought, desire and consciousness has the "Word of God"—that is, the mind of God abiding within the consciousness of the soul—and has accepted Christ as his "personal Savior." The young men to whom John wrote, had done this. They were "strong," and had overcome the lust of the flesh and the "Word of God" abideth within them. They were the children of God. John did not write this same message to the old men and to children. They did not need it. The father did not have to contend with the "wicked one" as the young men did. The lust of the flesh was stronger within the young man. The "wicked one" was stronger within their consciousness than he was within the consciousness of the old men; and the little children had not yet come into the days of the "evil one;" "they know the Father" because lust had not yet taken charge of their souls.

There is a devil and the mind of this devil is the lust of the flesh. Devil comes from the Greek word, *diabolus*, which means a malicious accuser, and is equivalent to the Hebrew word, *Satan*, which means an adversary. The original meaning of adversary comes from the Latin, meaning "turn toward," and "lying before the eyes." Idea is the carnal senses turning to and deceiving the soul.



Eve expressed it, when she said, "the tree looked good and the serpent deceived her."

The carnal senses lie and are false to the eye of the soul senses. The carnal appetites lie to the spiritual senses of the soul. It was the carnal senses that enticed Eve, and lied to her. These carnal senses are the adversary of the soul. The lust senses are spiritual death to the soul. They are the continuous enemy of the soul. When the carnal senses are within the consciousness of the soul, the soul is spiritually dead. The lust senses every moment tempt the soul and are enemies of the soul. The mind of the carnal senses is the mind of evil and fallen spirits. They are the mind of the devil. They are the devil within your and my soul.

"Be sober, be vigilant, because your adversary, the devil, as a roaring lion, walketh about seeking whom he may devour." First Peter 5:8. The devil to whom St. Peter here refers as the adversary of the soul, is sex lust. It is the same serpent that deceived the soul of Eve; and this adversary which is the sex lust of the flesh is the mind of evil and fallen spirits, manifested within the consciousness of the soul as spiritual death. Carnal ideas are the ideas of fallen spirits; lust desires are the desires of fallen spirits.

"And the angels which kept not their first estate; but left their own habitation, He hath reserved in everlasting chains under darkness unto the judgment of the great day. Even as Sodom and Gomorrah and the cities about them in like manner giving themselves over to fornication and going after strange flesh, are set forth for an example suffering the vengeance of eternal fire." Jude 6-7. "The first estate" of the fallen spirits was a

holy state. They were holy and had the mind of the Father. They were in "God's image," and their ideas were the spiritual ideas of God. They had the mind of God. Their "fall" was in thought. They left their own "habitation." Their habitation was a spiritual habitation, but they "fell" to carnality in desire and thought. This carnal state of lust reflects their minds. The desires of the flesh are their desires. The lust of the flesh is their mind.

St. Jude compares their state of thought and mind of those of Sodom and Gomorrah, and to that state of spiritual degradation which lusts for "strange flesh." The degraded desires of the flesh are their desires. The lust which lusts for "strange flesh" is their mind within the consciousness of the soul. This creation of lust and carnality is their "habitation" and their state of thought. It is their mind and their state of thought, within their consciousness that diseases the race and produces the insanity of the race. Lust is the cause of disease and insanity, and lust is their minds.

Our Lord refers to the chief of these fallen spirits when he said, "ye are of your father, the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie he speaketh of his own; for he is a liar and the father of it." John 8:44. Here the Master refers to the mind of the chief of these fallen spirits as the mind of lust and carnality. He says that he was a murderer from the beginning. He was cast down to darkness and death when he fell. This darkness and death is the lust of the flesh. This is his fallen state and the fallen state is lust in thought.

Our Lord says he was a murderer from the beginning. All death is within the lust of the flesh. There was no death until lust and carnality entered into consciousness. Then the soul died spiritually and spiritually was banished from the presence of God. Our Lord says, "When he speaketh a lie he speaketh of his own, for he is a liar and the father of it." His mind is a lie. The lust of the flesh is a lie and all carnality is a lie. It promises life and gives death. It promises pleasure and gives pain. It promises health and gives disease. It promises light and gives darkness. The carnal senses are every moment lying to the soul. They lied to the man "made in God's image" and caused him to lose the spiritual idea and the spiritual image of God in thought and consciousness. They promised him wisdom and gave him blindness. They promised him life and gave him death. They promised him pleasure and gave him pain. They promised him light and gave him darkness.

The lust of the flesh is today, as in all ages, filling the insane asylums, hospitals and prison cells of the world. The lust senses are liars and they are the mind of fallen spirits. "He that committeth sin is of the devil, for the devil sinneth from the beginning. For this purpose, the son of God was manifested that he might destroy the works of the devil." First John 3:8. Here the apostle defines the devil as sin.

Sin is the lust of the flesh. Sin means "missing of the mark" and mark means "character." All character is within the ideas of the divine mind. All that is holy is divine and all life is divine. To "miss the mark" of holiness is to miss the mark of life and to die. Adam and Eve, when they yielded



to the lust of the flesh, which was the mind of the serpent, became unholy in thought and "missed the mark" of life and died spiritually. They became lustful in thought and lust is death.

St. John said the devil "sinneth from the beginning;" that is, he was a fallen spirit and became carnal in thought and was cast out of the presence of God and lost the holiness of the divine mind and died spiritually. The fallen spirits are in outer darkness. They have no consciousness of that which is holy and divine. They are lustful in thought and nature. This is sin; and this is death; and the "devil sinneth from the beginning;" that is, was carnal in thought. This was the origin and the beginning of sin and death.

"Whosoever is born of God, doth not commit sin; for his seed remaineth in him, and he cannot sin, because he is born of God." First John, 3:9. Here St. John defines sin. He defines sin as that lustful state whereby the generative seed is emitted. Without lust in thought and consciousness the generative seed is not emitted. If the mind is pure and the soul is kept in a holy state of consciousness, the generative seed is retained. But if the mind is lustful, and the soul is unholy in thought, then the generative seed is emitted. This is sin. This is spiritual death. St. John says, "those that have been born of God are so holy in thought, that they retain the seed." He says that those who have been born of God are so pure in thought that they do not emit the generative seed. This holy state is regeneration. It is the soul overcoming the lust of the flesh, in thought and consciousness; and the soul coming into the spiritual consciousness of God, who is

spirit, through the spiritual senses of the soul. This state of holy consciousness is regeneration.

In this state of holy consciousness the soul through spiritual sense conceived spiritual ideas and not carnal ideas. The soul then is in the "image of God" and has been re-created in thought and consciousness and cannot sin, because it has overcome the lust of the flesh. This is "sanctification." The saints are in this state of thought, and in this state of thought the saints have healed the sick in all ages. They have healed the sick, because they have overcome the belief of pleasure and life in the lust of the flesh; and are not therefore subject to the law of disease and death of the lust of the flesh.

When the soul has become so pure as not to believe in the lie of the serpent that there is pleasure in the lust senses it is not subject to the pain of the physical senses. Sin is in thoughts as well as in acts. The sex relations are not necessary to constitute sin. Sodom, Gomorrah and Babylon may be carried within the consciousness of the soul, in thought and act, without the sex act being committed. Purity does not consist in restraining from the sex act. Purity consists in keeping the soul in that state of consciousness wherein it has no carnal thoughts nor lust desires.

While I write, my attention has been called by a physician of Kansas City to a case in point. This physician has read my books on the Bible and understands the law that I am discussing. He has a patient thirty-four years of age. This man states upon his honor to his physician that he never knew a female sexually until a few weeks ago, and that he never practiced "self-abuse" since he was fourteen years of age; that his people were church peo-

ple and had advised him that these things were wrong, and that he lived what he thought was a pure life according to form. Yet at thirty-four years of age he is diseased both in body and mind. His mind is weak, his body is weak. His flesh is coarse and flabby, his sex forces are gone and he is a wreck. On examination, he admits that he has been very carnal minded all his life and was strongly and vigorously sexed. That he has lived in thought the carnal life and that the very presence of the opposite sex put a flame of fire and lust to burning within him which consumed him; and as a result, practically all of his life he has emitted the seed at night in dreams. In this way he has depleted his system and destroyed his mind. He has lived the life of "self-abuse" in mind and thought.

St. Jude speaks of this class of sinners. "Likewise also these filthy dreamers defile the flesh." Jude 8. The Apostles compare them to the lust of Sodom and Gomorrah, which went after "strange flesh." Our insane asylums and hospitals are filled with this class of sinners. They defile the body and mind, through impure thought and by mental fornication, adultery and self-abuse. A majority of the world thinks they are pure if they restrain from the sex act, but purity must first exist in thought. If the thought is pure, the soul is pure.

When our Lord went down to Nazareth to preach the Gospel, he found them impure in thought. They had Sodom, Gomorrah and Babylon within the consciousness of their souls. Hence they turned upon him. His pure thoughts and pure soul aroused their indignation. They resented his very presence, hence "they led him to the foothills of the



town to kick him down head foremost." If a true minister of the Gospel, who truly had the spiritual understanding of the Gospel, should attempt to preach the true Gospel to a congregation today, he would receive the same reception. His audience, with Sodom, Gomorrah and Babylon within the consciousness of their souls, would turn upon him. In a few minutes he would have no audience. They would stone him as they did the Master; but if they were pure in thought and their souls were cleansed from all lust, they would receive the Gospel as the spiritual ideas and word of God.

The unclean in thought will turn upon the clean; the impure in thought hate the pure. The Bible would have been burned up centuries ago if the carnal minded world had known what it contained. If a carnal minded race had understood its contents, it would have destroyed the Bible.

The author has known the impure in thought to begin to read his book, "The Truth About the Bible," and to read a few pages and to throw it down and declare they would not read the vile stuff. He has known maiden ladies, who claim to be pure, and we presume were pure in form, to throw it down in disgust. They did not know that it was their own impure thoughts that made them hate this book. They did not know it was because they were practicing mental "self-abuse," and it was in every line of their faces and written innately within their consciousness. This was the reason they hated this book. Every line within the book condemns their state of thought.

The impure in thought always flee from that which condemns. They always hate that which discloses the impurity of their state of thought. The

pure in heart have no shame. The Psalmist says. "to the pure, all things are pure." Those who have overcome the lust of the flesh in thought, as well as in act, have no shame. It is the innate shame within the soul and the lust thoughts of the soul that makes the impure ashamed. This state of thought produces disease, insanity and death. The carnal state of thought will cause the generative organs to excessively secrete the generative fluid and to poison the entire body and mind; but if the soul and mind are kept pure in thought the generative organs will only secrete sufficient fluid to supply the needs of the body; and the body will respond in fine fabric to the pure thoughts of the soul.

The body of the pure in thought is of fine and pure fabric. Our Lord was so pure in thought that it was written upon the purity of his face and the fine fabric of his body. The purity of his thoughts was expressed so intensely upon his face that devils cried out, when they came in his presence, "torment us not, we know who thou art, thou art the Christ, the Son of the living God." He was so holy that his very presence "tormented" these evil spirits. His holy and spiritual thoughts "tormented" their carnal thoughts. His holy soul "tormented" their carnal souls. This state of thought is the "torment" of the lost. They are in a carnal state of thought, and this is torment.

Our Lord, being purity itself in thought, cast the carnal thoughts and desires out of the souls of others. With the purity of his mind he changed their thought. He changed their belief of pleasure in the lust senses of the flesh and when he changed their thoughts, and they became pure in thought, so

as not to believe in the pleasure of the senses and the orgasm of the sex act, he healed them.

There can be no disease, sickness and death without the belief of the senses. The soul must believe in the lie of the serpent that there is pleasure in the orgasm of the sex act, for the body to be diseased and the mind insane. Remove this belief of the lie of the serpent from the consciousness of the soul and the body responds and the mind becomes sane. This is what our Lord did when he healed them. It takes the belief of pleasure in the senses of the sex act to produce disease and insanity. Our Lord removed this state of thought from the consciousness of the diseased and insane and healed them and restored them to their right minds.

The belief in the pleasure of the senses is satanic. The soul is under the influence of the satanic mind when it believes that there is pleasure in the orgasm of the sex act. Remove this satanic thought from the consciousness of the soul and the soul becomes holy and the mind sane and the body whole. There can be no disease and death, without the lie of the serpent, within the consciousness of the soul that there is pleasure in the orgasm of the sex act.



## CHAPTER X.

The author was born of invalid parents. He was the youngest child. Both parents were well along in life when he was born. He inherited a frail body and a weak nervous system. At six years of age he would faint. His nerve centers were very weak. They were so weak that he would faint in the spring season as a boy six years of age. His spine was very weak. At about twenty-five years of age he broke down from overstudy. His nervous system was not strong enough to stand the amount of mental work that he was doing. He had mastoid of the left ear, as the result of a catarrhal condition. The doctors performed four operations for it and injured his spine and destroyed the nerve centers of the vassormotor centers.

Later they operated on him for appendicitis. This completely shattered his nervous condition. His body perished, as it were, for the want of nutriment. His nerve force was gone and he could not digest and assimilate food. His innate weak nerve system from these operations produced this condition. The doctors said there was no chance for him to live. He has never drank whiskey or taken drugs and was what the world would consider a moral man.

Ten years ago, when all hope of life was given up, he began to live this pure life in thought the best he could. He kept the image of the pure in his thoughts. He made every effort to exclude the carnal from the consciousness of his thoughts. In

this state of thought he has lived for many years, without indulging the sexual relations, and has finally reached that state, by keeping his mind and thoughts pure, that he can retain all the sex fluid in his body. In this way he has rebuilt his body to a normal state. His spine is ruined as a result of the operations, but otherwise he has not a diseased organ in his body. His mind is clear and strong. His eye is as youthful as it was when he was a man twenty years of age.

Had I a spine, I believe I could live to be a man eighty or ninety years of age, notwithstanding I was born an invalid and my nervous system and spinal cord has been ruined by the doctors' operations. My body is that of a young man and in texture it is fine. Ten years ago it was dead and without vitality. Purity in thought and living will keep body, mind and soul healthy. Impurity in thought will disease both mind and body.

Purity must first exist in the mind, before it exists in the body. If I were pure enough I believe I could heal my spine where it was ruined and destroyed by the operations, but I am not perfect. I have been through lust and carnality and I have known the opposite sex sexually. I have never been a bad man and a lustful man as the world terms lustful and bad men; but I have not been free from carnality. However, to the extent that I have overcome carnality in thought and become pure in thought, it has been reflected in my body. Purity means "free from extraneous matter." It is that which is not contaminated and corrupted with extraneous and foreign matter.

Man made in the "image of God" was pure. He was holy and entirely spiritual. He became impure

when he became adulterated with the lust of the flesh and corrupted by the carnal senses of the flesh. Gold is a pure metal; that is, is comparatively free from extraneous matter and other metals; and hence it is used in the Bible as a type and as the symbol of the holy city. For the New Jerusalem will be entirely spiritual and every thought therein will be non-carnal. Purity is the non-carnal in thought. This was the state of the holy angels before they "fell" and became carnal in thought. "For if God spared not the angels that sinned, but casts them down to hell, and delivered them into chains of darkness, to be reserved unto judgment." Second Peter, 2:4. Here we see that the angels who "fell" were before the "fall" holy and divine, but after the "fall" they are reserved in darkness. The "fall" was sin; that is, lust. They sinned and this sin was lust; and as the result of this they were cast down into hell.

Hell means "Hades," and "Hades" means the grave or death. "Hades" is the "earth" in thought—that is, the thoughts of the carnal man. So the "earth" that is all flesh became "corrupt"—carnal. Spiritual death is the physical grave. All go to the grave physically as the result of lust and spiritual death. Man made in the "image of God" was told to "subdue" and have "dominion" over the "earth," and the original of the world translated "earth" means the carnal man, with his lust nature. Had man made in the "image of God" "subdued" and had "dominion" over the earth, that is, the lust of the carnal man, he would have ascended out of the physical body as our Lord did on Mount of Ascension. When our Lord ascended out of the physical body he refilled and "subdued" the "earth;" that is,



completely overcame the lust and carnal senses of the physical man in thought.

His going "upward" was symbolic of his ascension spiritually in thought over the carnal in thought. This is the true resurrection. But when man yielded to the lust of the flesh he was cast down to hell in thought; that is, carnality in thought and physical death as the result.

The senses are confusion. That is the reason that there are so many different religions and sects. They are founded on the carnal senses and therefore are confusion. Their religion is not of the spiritual senses and of soul thoughts. Sex worship is confusion. Christianity is unity. There is no confusion in Christianity. All souls who have overcome the confusion of the carnal senses in thought, think in unity, they are one in thought. Christianity is the same in all ages and in all countries. It is of the spiritual senses of the soul; it is the soul in union with God, its Maker.

The soul is the spiritual idea of God and is conceived by the divine mind and in this spiritual image of God it has life. It is in union with God. All souls in the "image of God" think the spiritual ideas of God and are a unit in thought. There is no confusion in that state of thought. All confusion of thought comes out of the carnal senses and the creeds of the carnal senses are confusion. When the race shall become spiritual enough to overcome the belief that there is pleasure in the orgasm of the sex act there will be no more confusion in thought. It will be a Christian race and truth will abide within the consciousness of the race. This spiritual understanding is of soul sense. Remove the lie of the serpent that there is pleasure in the senses of

the sex act from the consciousness of the race, and men will cease to murder women, and women will cease to murder men, and men will cease to kill men over women, and women will cease to kill women over men.

Remove the lie of the serpent that there is pleasure in the orgasm of the sex act from the consciousness of the souls of the race and there will be no more "ointment," odors and perfumery. No more fine linens, pearls and gold, "for no man will buy their merchandise any more," as John tells us in Revelations. These things which the female adorns herself with will have no more value. With the belief in the pleasure of the orgasm of the sex act removed from the souls and consciousness of the race, the merchants of the earth will bring their merchandise to the ports of sex worship no more. The female will not dress so as to attract the attention of the male, and the male will not plunder and oppress to secure money to get the merchandise which gratifies the vanity of the female.

Remove the "Prince of this world" from the consciousness of the souls of the race and universal peace, universal harmony, universal justice and universal love will prevail in truth and fact within the consciousness and the life of the race. Literature, art, and music will no longer be saturated with the thought of sex, and civilization will not be directed by sex, and the race will be no longer insane and diseased. Jesus said. "know the truth and the truth shall make you free." God is Truth, and to know God is to know the Truth.

To know the Truth is to give up the belief in the pleasure of the senses of the sex act, and for the soul to overcome the belief of the senses that

there is pleasure in the orgasm of the sex act. When the soul has overcome this thought and desire in consciousness it is made free indeed, and has overcome death. It is made free in thought and consciousness from all that is carnal and this is the Freedom of the Spirit. It is only a step from the land of bondage to the land of freedom. It is only a step from the land of the senses to the land of the spirit. It is only a step from the land of matter to the land of mind. It is only a step from the land of darkness to the land of light, and from the land of night to the land of day, and from the land of death to the land of life; and this step is in thought, and the soul overcoming in consciousness the belief of the lie of the serpent that there is pleasure in the senses of the orgasm of the sex act.

As we step across the border in thought, may our souls be purged from all that is carnal that the veil may be lifted, and with spiritual eyes divine may our souls see as we are seen and know as we are known.

As the sex senses of the material creation fail, all that is material fail. The old lawyer, when his sex powers fail, loses his clients; the old physician, when his sex power is gone, loses his patients. The old politician, when his sex force has failed him, loses his following in politics and his office. The merchant, as he grows old and his carnal senses fail, loses his customers. All that is human and carnal and material is constructed on the sex senses. When the sex fails the material things of this world fail; the "merchandise of the earth" is controlled by sex.

Carnality is "possession" and "obsession." Jesus cast carnality out of the consciousness of



those who were obsessed that they might think right. "Obsession" means to besiege. "Possession" means to hold in one's keeping or grasp. The belief that there is pleasure in the orgasm of the sex act besieges the soul and holds the soul within the grasp of this thought. The soul in this state of thought is "obsessed" and "possessed." The insane are in this state of thought. They are "obsessed" and "posessed."

Jesus, when on earth, cast the lie of the serpent out of the consciousness of the souls thus diseased and made them free indeed. He cast out of the consciousness the belief of the lie of the serpent that there is pleasure in the orgasm of the sex act and made the insane sane and those in bondage to the lust of the flesh free indeed. The carnal state of thought is "obsession" and "possession," and all the race is "obsessed." "Filthy dreams" is "obsession."

The author now recalls a young lady twenty-two years of age, who innocently used to relate in the parlor and publicly her "obsession." She was in love with a young man, she carried him in her thoughts and consciousness all the time. Sexually, she was infatuated with him, but she was innocent and pure so far as maintaining her physical virtue was concerned, yet she was unclean in thought. She said she couldn't sleep with ease, that she dreamed at all hours of the night, and during the night she would have the most horrible dreams. She said she would dream that a snake had her. That she would dream of snakes all night and see them within her mind and wake up and find them not there. The snakes that she saw in her mind while asleep were symbolic of her state of thought.

They were symbols of her lust desires. The man that she was sexually infatuated with was producing these snakes in her dreams.

These snakes were carnal thoughts and they are the serpents that Jesus said "should be cast out in His name." The dreams that this young lady was possessed of were the "filthy dreams" that St. Jude and the other inspired writers wrote about. If the soul would be free from these filthy dreams let it "weight upon God." If the soul would be pure let it cast out every carnal thought of the senses and behold spirit as purity and the source of all life.

The man who has diseased his brain through alcoholic drinks sees snakes. This is termed "delerium tremens." He is diseased in his senses. The snakes that he sees through his diseased senses typify his diseased thoughts. He is "obsessed." The sensual society woman of leisure, who keeps dogs as her companions is "obsessed." These dogs, which she selects as her companions, type her state of thought. She is diseased in thought. The desire to have these dogs as her companions is of the sex senses. It is her abnormal state of carnal consciousness that makes her desire dogs as companions.

The Author, while practising law, had a client who came near being killed through the sex jealousy of a dog. The dog was a favorite companion of a sensual society woman. This client came upon the dog and his mistress while the dog was performing the sex act upon the mistress, and the dog through a fit of jealousy sprung at the man's throat and came near killing him before he could escape with his life. The Author has personally

been told by reputable men, that this state of sex jealousy existed on the frontier plains between females of the lower animals and the men who use them for sexual purposes.

These human beings are "possessed" with the worst forms of devils, they are in the worst state of soul degradation. They are in that state of soul degradation which St. Jude speaks of as Sodom and Gomorrah; and as St. Peter speaks of as "brute beasts." Our Lord cast this state of "obsession" out of the consciousness of men and women when on earth. They were all around him and they are all around us. They have existed in all ages. This state of thought is of the serpent. It is the lowest state of spiritual death. It is yielding to the lower brute creation in violation of all natural and spiritual law. Man was given "dominion" over the lower brute creation and this was a spiritual "dominion," and the violation of this spiritual law is the lowest state of carnal degradation and spiritual death. It is the lowest state of "obsession." It is spiritual darkness and death.

Hell, that is lust and spiritual death, has to exist within the consciousness of the soul, before the material body returns to the grave. The angels that sinned, that is conceive lust in consciousness, were cast out into this state of spiritual death, and this is Hell. The Resurrection from this state of Spiritual death, is the true Resurrection. "When he saw Jesus, he cried out and fell down before Him and with a loud voice said, What have I to do with thee, Jesus thou Son of God most high? I beseech thee torment me not. For he had commanded the unclean spirit to come out of the man. For oftentimes it had caught him; and he was kept



bound with chains and in fetters; and he brake the bands and was driven of the devil into the wilderness. And Jesus asked him saying, What is thy name? And he said, Legion, because many devils were entered into him." Luke 8:28-30.

These devils were the evil thoughts of fallen spirits. These thoughts are carnal and lustful thoughts, the mind of lust is the mind of fallen spirits. It is sin. The world is filled with men and women filled with devils. The insane asylums of the world are filled with men and women possessed of devils. They have gone under the law of the serpent. They are insane. They are in outer darkness spiritually. The Master's very presence made these spirits cry out with torment, His holy presence tormented them. They are in outer darkness. This devil is the serpent that deceived Eve, and he is lust, see Gen. 3:1. He is a lying spirit. Gen. 3:4. The carnal and lust senses of the flesh is his mind and they lie and deceive the soul. He is cursed by God. Gen. 3:14. "God cursed the earth." The "earth" is the lust of the flesh, and the lust of the flesh is the "earth."

It is in evidence before us daily, that God has cursed the lust of the flesh! It is written in all nature. Go to the museums of the civilized world where the diseases of the human race are in evidence, and you can see the curse of God upon the lust of the flesh. I have stood in these museums and examined the different degrees of syphilis of the races of the earth and their curse upon the human flesh. The more sensual races have the worst degree of syphilis. In these institutions I have observed the different stages of "self abuse" and its destructive force upon the

human body and mind. I have also observed the various diseases of the human body caused from gonorrhea. All nature is cursed as the result of the lust of the flesh. I have gone to the institutions for feeble-minded children and there observed the curse of the serpent on the offspring of diseased parents.

I have gone to the institutions for the treatment of cancer and there observed this curse of lust upon the human flesh in all of its stages. I have observed mothers with their breasts eaten up as the result of lust. In the insane asylums we see the inmates with the "image of the beast" still in their consciousness, crying out like demons. Truly, the curse of the serpent is in all nature, and the lust of the flesh is cursed by a Holy God. This devil, which is the lust of the flesh here in this fallen stage, tempted our Lord. "Then was Jesus led up of the spirit into the wilderness to be tempted of the devil. And when he had fasted forty days and forty nights he was afterwards an hungered." Matt. 4:1-2. The devil here was the lust of the flesh; he is the same devil that caused the fall of man.

The lust of the flesh is the mind of fallen spirits. Had our Lord yielded to the lust of the flesh, this fallen race would have been eternally lost. But by overcoming the lust of the flesh, he kept the holy state of thought and consciousness and became the Redeemer and the Shepherd of our souls. He was in the flesh without the lust of the flesh, that is, He was in the "world but not of the world." He was sexed as all other men but overcame the lust of the flesh completely in thought and was the Christ and the "life" and the "word of

God." He was the "word of God" because he was in the flesh and knew not the lust of the flesh in thought, and had only the mind of the Father, which mind is holy and spiritual. All who accept him as their "personal Savior" must overcome the lust of the flesh as He did, in thought and consciousness. As we overcome the lust of the flesh, we accept Him as our "personal Savior," and become the sons of God. We are not the sons of God until we overcome the lust of the flesh.

Another form of "obsession" is that of self abuse. The mind becomes addicted to this habit, and under control of this thought, the soul becomes so degraded that the individual loses mind and will power. The author knew of a case of a young man some eighteen years of age who occupied the same bed chamber with a man who termed himself a "minister of the Gospel." This so-called "minister of the Gospel" taught this young man self abuse, so the young man said, and we believed he was telling the truth. He reached that state in which he could not retain his generative seed; it would flow from him all the time and continuously. His will power was gone. He would stand and cry and abuse this so-called "minister of the Gospel" who taught him this practice which had destroyed him. It was a pitiful case.

The author recalls another case. While he was a student in college there was a mature man there. He said he was a minister of the Gospel. He had been ordained and was going to the foreign field as a missionary and did go after leaving college. He was a man of thirty or thirty-five years of age and unmarried. His room mate personally told me that he would awake at night



and find this so-called minister of the Gospel practicing self abuse. He was "obsessed" with the thought of the perverted lie of the serpent that there was pleasure in the unnatural indulgence of the carnal senses.

A layman who has studied this question very closely for many years and has been a trustee of theological seminaries, purchased the author's "Truth About the Bible." He told the author that he desired it for the purpose of presenting the idea to his co-laborers on the board of trustees as to the question of self abuse among theological students. He said that he and some other gentlemen had been investigating the question, and he said they found it very prevalent among these young men studying for the ministry. The reason is very natural. These young men at the age when their sex powers are strong, enter college to study for the ministry. They assume a false modesty that is unnatural. They never investigate nature and are not taught nature. They study everything except what the Bible is about, although they are going out into the world to teach the people the truth of the Bible. They think, owing to the very profession of which they study, that they can afford to restrain from sex indulgence with the opposite sex, and this is true. They go from college to some theological seminary, there they are housed in and are kept in ignorance as to the nature of what the Bible is about.

In these theological institutions they are taught everything except the truth of the Bible. During these years of sex vigor they become "obsessed" by the desire to gratify their sex passion, and a

large percentage of them get to practicing self abuse, and become addicted to this habit. This accounts for their femininity of thought and their facial expression as a profession. As a profession they are not men of great vigor and commanding minds. Of course, there are exceptions to this rule. Let us trust and hope that finally the institutions in which these young men are educated will change their course of instruction so as to teach them the truth of the Bible. Let us pray and hope as the days come and go that their instructors will awake to the truth of the Bible, and will teach it to the young men who come to them for instruction, and who are to go forth to be the moral and spiritual advisers of the race.

The Catholic priests as a rule are free from this "obsession." They are taught in the course of "moral theology" what the Bible is about. They are taught that all sin is within the sex, and that the indulgence of the sexual desires is self destruction. They are taught total abstinence. Some may violate this law, but as a class they observe it closely enough to preserve their mental and physical vigor; hence, they, as a class, are a dominating force in the intellectual life of the race. The Protestant ministry must realize this truth, as a class, if they would be an intellectual force in the life of the race. Sex "obsession" is mental and physical destruction.

All who accept the Christ as their "personal Savior" must overcome the lust of the flesh as he did. in thought and consciousness. As we overcome the lust of the flesh, we accept him as our "Personal Savior," and become the sons of God. We are not the sons of God until we overcome

the lust of the flesh. Our Lord fasted for forty days and nights in the wilderness while undergoing the temptations of the lust of the flesh. Material food feeds the carnal senses. Animal food produces lust passion; feed a bull dog meat and he will fight. All hatred and lust is within the sex. The Jews fasted because they wanted to deny the lust of the flesh and to be spiritual. The Jews did not eat pork, because the hog is the low type of animal flesh. The hog is sensual. His meat therefore, as food, produces carnal and sensual thoughts. The Jew would not eat the "hind" part of animal life.

The "hinder" part is where the sex organs are located and is the "unclean" and sensual part of the animal. This part of the animal as food produces sensuality in thought; hence, the orthodox Jews of this day will not eat ham. The Catholic church maintains the fast. This is to reduce the passion of the lust of the flesh. Children and old people in the Catholic church do not have to fast. Invalids do not have to fast in the Catholic church. But the young and those in the vigor of life are required to fast, and certain days of the week they do not eat meat. The purpose of fast is to reduce lust and passion. The "Princes of the church" understand this law. The true fast is a complete denial of the lust of the flesh and the spiritual communion with God as Spirit.

The cross has a history. It is symbolic of evil and of the original sin. The cross is the symbol of the male generative organs. It is the symbol of destruction. The serpent is self-destruction. In the ancient oriental countries the cross was placed upon the ground, and those who



were murdered were carried to it and their feet nailed to the bottom of it and their heads to the top of it. In this way they were crucified. When the cross came into the Western civilization, as a means of death, they reversed it; and put the lower parts upward and the long part downward and nailed the hands to the cross parts and the body to the main part.

This was the means of death in that part of the Roman Empire known as Judea and Palestine during the life of our Lord. The cross was taken as the symbol of the sexual organs of the male and was patented after the sexual organs of the male. It is the symbol of hatred and death. All hatred and death is within the sex. It was no mere coincidence that our Lord was crucified upon a cross. It was the order of things. He had come to save a lost world from that thought which the cross symbolized upon which he was put to death. All hatred is within the sex. It was the hatred of the age in which he lived that had Him put to death.

The holiness of our Lord aroused the thought of the carnal age in which He lived against Him. The lust and hatred within their minds had him crucified. The cross upon which he was crucified was the symbol of lust, and the evil minds of the fallen spirits, and it was the thought which this cross symbolized that had him crucified upon the cross. The author knows from experience the hatred of the carnal mind. Since he began to write his books on the Bible he has had men to hate him with the most intense hatred, to whom he never spoke and of whom he never said an unkind word in his life. They knew of his books

and the contents of them, and the very idea of these books on the Bible aroused their hatred. The idea of these books took from them their gods.

They were living for lust, and the teachings of these books deprived them of all that which from their viewpoint was worth living for. Hence, they hated the very name of the man who wrote them. The author can understand why the Sanhedrien hated Jesus. He can understand why the high priest said he must be crucified. When I first conceived the idea of my books on the Bible, I thought all I had to do was to give the idea to the so-called Christian clergy, and they would take it up and give it to the people through the churches; but I soon found I was mistaken. I suffered all kinds of insults from the so-called Christian clergy, and the door of the so-called Christian Churches has been constantly closed to the idea and the so-called Christian press had no place for it.

I discovered that the clergy were preaching their senses to the carnal senses of their congregations, and that the churches were pagan and not Christian; and that the so-called Christian and religious press was heaten and not Christian. I discovered that the clergy were preaching their senses to the carnal man and that their congregations were worshipping the carnal senses for Christianity; and that the so-called Christian press was maintained as a commercial enterprise, and was pagan in its views. The world is as pagan today as it was when Jesus was crucified two thousand years ago. Hence, I have lost all hope of true christianity ever securing a hearing in the so-called ecclesiastical churches. They are pagan institutions.

Christianity must be revived outside of the organized churches of the pagan senses. It had its origin outside of the pale of ecclesiasticism. Pagan ecclesiasticism would not receive the teachings of our Lord when he was here in the flesh. "He was tempted in all things as we are, but without sin." That is, he underwent the temptation of the lust of the flesh, but the sex lust of the flesh never entered the consciousness of his holy life; hence, he taught the purity of his soul; and a pagan ecclesiasticism bowed down to lust in thought would not accept his teachings; and the carnality of ecclesiasticism today, will not accept the spiritual teachings and the spiritual ideas and the truth, as our Lord taught them. Our Lord taught the law of Heaven and the law of life; that is, the non-sensual and non-carnal in thought. Pagan ecclesiasticism has taught in all ages, and is teaching today, the law of Hell; that is the law of death, which is lust and carnality in thought. Hell is Hades, and Hades is the grave and the grave is the result of carnal thoughts. Man did not return to dust until he indulged in lust.

Man never ate until after he sinned and yielded to lust and was turned out of Eden. After he accepted the lie of the serpent, that there is pleasure and life in the orgasm of the sex act, he was turned out of Eden. That is, he was turned into the carnality of the flesh in thought and consciousness, then he was told he should eat and live by the "sweat of his face;" then, too, he was "ashamed" and sought to cover up his "nakedness." From that day until now sin cursed man has labored and struggled for material food and



clothing with which to hide his "nakedness and shame."

This law is true to nature. The young at puberty eat much. Their sex forces are developing. And it takes much food to feed them. During sex development it takes much food for the physical man. When his sex forces begin to decline the physical man cannot assimilate much food. If he eats heavily after the sex forces have decayed, he poisons himself. The sex forces are the physical man. Sex indulgence destroys the nerves of the physical man and the physical man is manifested through the nervous system. All material life is cell life, and all cell life is male and female nature. This is the corporeal and material creation. In mind and spirit life there are neither male nor female nor cell life. There is no life in nerves, and no intelligence in matter. All intelligence and life is within mind.

As the cells of the nervous system develop the young come into sex maturity. If they indulge sexually while the nervous system is developing it impairs physical perfection. The brain is the source where all nerve force is generated. Nerve force is collected within the brain and distributed over the human body through the nervous system by way of the spinal cord and generative organs. These mental impulses create physical vitality. When the nerve cells of the brain fail to function, co-ordination ceases. Mental impulses of mind function through the nerve cells of the brain. There is no life or intelligence in the nerve cells. Life and intelligence is within the mind, but when the nerve cells are destroyed, co-ordination ceases.

The young who indulge sexually impair the

development of the nerve cells of the brain. A young man or young woman who indulges sex indulgence cannot hope to develop into a strong man or woman, mentally or physically. The sex sense should never be indulged until the nerve cells of the brain are mature. A man should never have sexual intercourse until he is thirty years of age, and a woman should never indulge sexually until she is twenty-five years of age, and then only for the purpose of reproduction. The nerve cells of the brain and of the generative organ of the male, mature at thirty; and of the female at twenty-five.

The normal man is stronger sexually at thirty years of age than ever before or ever after; and the average woman is stronger sexually at twenty-five years of age than ever before or ever afterwards, and this is the age that reproduction should take place. Sex indulgence should only be tolerated for the purpose of reproduction. All sexual indulgence is self destruction. It weakens both mind and body; and therefore should only be indulged for the purpose of reproduction.

There is not and cannot be anything spiritual in the relation between the sexes, and it should only be tolerated in this carnal state for the purpose of reproduction. When the Gospel, that is the Christ mind, which is spiritual and non-carnal, has been realized fully in consciousness by the race, the race will propagate no more; and the Kingdom of God, which is spiritual, will be at hand. This is the Millenium. The indulgence of lust has destroyed more human beings than all the wars of the ages. It is Satanic and selfish in its nature.

The Author recalls a personal case which illus-

trates this law. A young man and young woman were married. She was stronger sexually than he. They knew nothing of the laws of nature and the spiritual truth of the Bible. They indulged their desires at will. She destroyed him. She was the stronger, sexually, of the two. She absorbed his vitality and he contracted tuberculosis and dissolution soon took place. She collected his insurance and in three weeks was married to another handsome young man, and was again indulging her sexual desires at will. The Author knew her personally and she said to him, in speaking of her second marriage and her second husband, that "she had a husband that worshipped her." She was unconscious of the thought that was in the Author's mind when she made this statement to him. Physically she was a beautiful woman, and as the Author looked at her and heard her make this statement, he thought, "My good woman, you are unconscious of the fact that you have killed one man through the law of death and sensuality, and that the second man, whom you say 'worships you' is 'bowing down' to Satan, which Jesus spoke of and which is within your 'sex forces.'"

This man was bowing down and worshipping her lust nature, which had killed one man and was now ready to destroy another, and in destroying the second man she would probably destroy herself. The Author recalls another couple. They were elegant and refined young people. The husband was a physician, and twenty-five years of age when they married. The wife was nineteen and beautiful and sensual. They were about equally mated sexually and physically. In four years time they had destroyed each other. He was a hand-



some and perfect man physically when he married. In four years time he was a tubercular and a wreck, and the wife was a nervous and physical wreck. They had destroyed each other. This is the law of the serpent. Married people should never indulge the sex relation except for reproduction, and at all times should take weeks and months for spiritual meditation before indulging sexually for the purpose of reproduction.

Their minds should be pure and free from all abnormal sexual desires when indulging for reproductive purposes. "The Princes" of the Catholic Church know that the whole question of the Bible is one of sex, and that this material creation is of the lie of the senses and the serpent; but they do not give it out to the people. The Protestant clergy as a class do not know this. They are ignorant, as a class, as to the law of sex of the Bible. The "Princes" of the Catholic Church proceed on the idea that all the race are children, and are not capable of thinking for themselves and governing themselves. Hence, they seek to regulate the sex question through a system of formalities and rites.

They consider all the race, children and the church their mother, and the Pope their Father. It is the duty of the father to regulate the morals of his own household. The father and mother tutor their children in sex and morals. The Catholic church is formed on the same idea. It proceeds on the idea that the whole question of the race is one of sex, and it is the duty of the Pope to regulate the sex question, through the church and the priesthood; hence, the Pope is called the "Holy Father." He is the Father of all the "children

of the church," and disciplines all of his children on the sex question through the priesthood, and that is the reason he is called the "Holy Father," and that is the reason every priest is called "Father."

Every Priest in his parish takes charge of the sex question in the confessional. The purpose of the confessional is to regulate the sex question. Hence, the Priest is called "Father." This system has prevailed for ages. It might have served a good purpose in the dark ages and when the masses could not read, but the conditions of the race have changed. Man has begun to think for himself, and why not make a man out of him instead of a child? Why not tell him what all of these forms and rites are for and where they came from and what their purposes are? Why not teach him the truth of the Bible, and why not translate the Bible into its true language and meaning so that the race may understand it? Why not tell the race that all sin and death is within the sex? Why not translate the Bible into the true language of thought so that the race will understand that the Tower of Babel is the tower of carnality and is located within the sex and the lust senses of all the human race? Why not translate the Bible into human thought and language, so that the race will understand that the city of Babylon is the city of carnality in thought and is located within the sex senses and lust senses of every human being?

Why not translate the language of the Bible into human understanding so that the race will understand that the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah were the cities of sex "perversion" and lust in thought? Why not translate the Bible into cor-

rect language of thought so that the race will understand that the "golden calves" which the Jews made as idols and bowed down to while Moses was on Mt. Sinai receiving the ten commandments, was not a "calf," but that the original means "bull," and that this bull that they made of gold was the symbol of their own state of carnal thoughts? Why not translate the Bible into the language of human understanding so that the race may understand that idolatry means the carnal state of thought within the consciousness of the soul, and that the material images, which are termed "idols" in the Bible, only symbolize the state of carnal thought and consciousness of those who bow down to them. Why not translate the Bible into human understanding so that the people may understand that idolatry is a carnal state of thought, and that non-idolatry is a state of soul thought?

Why not translate the spiritual meaning of the Bible into language so as to convey spiritual ideas of truth that the race may know that the city of Zion and Jerusalem is the city of spiritual purity of the soul—that it is the city of spiritual thought and a state of consciousness wherein carnality does not prevail? Why not translate the language and thought of the Bible into human understanding so that the race will understand that orthodoxy is righteousness—that is, soul purity and non-carnality in thought; and that heresy means carnality in thought and consciousness? Why not translate the Bible into spiritual understanding and thought, so that the race will understand that "truth" is soul purity and non-carnality, and that "error" is carnality and spiritual death.

These two laws of thought run all through the



Bible and all through nature. Every thought is either spiritual or carnal, and every idea is of the soul or of the sex senses. This is the law of thought and the law of all human language, and why not translate the Bible into its correct meaning and into the language of human thought so that the race may understand it? This has never been done. The true meaning of the Bible has been covered up and concealed in its translation, and the race has been kept in ignorance as to the spiritual and carnal meaning of the Bible.

The Bible is the most vile Book ever written; and it would not be true if it was not. It deals with sin, sex and carnality in all of their corruption. It is the purest Book ever written and the holiest Book ever written, for it deals with the law of the soul in purity and as the child of God. These two conflicting laws of thought run all through the Bible. The Bible is a dual Book. All thought is dual. All consciousness is dual in its nature, and has been ever since the serpent entered into consciousness and deceived the first man and woman. When the serpent's mind shall have been overcome in thought and consciousness all thought will be pure. All things then will "be made new."

As the result of having kept the race in ignorance as to the meaning of the Bible and the source of sin, the race has been diseased and insane in all ages; and hospitals, jails and insane asylums have filled the world. All disease, insanity and crime have their origin within the serpent's mind.

Jesus said to the woman that touched him, "Who touched me, I felt virtue go out of me?" She was of the opposite sex. That is the reason Jesus was conscious that she had touched him.

He had not yet ascended. He was still in the flesh and the law of the senses were battling against the purity of his soul. He would not have objected to the Saintly John touching him, or even Stumbling Peter. But he healed the poor woman, diseased from sin. She had a disease peculiar to her sex. When Jesus walked upon the sea, he overcame the law of the carnal mind, which is sex. The law of the solar system is sex. It is the law of repulsion and attraction, and he overcame this law when he walked upon the sea.

If he had not been above the law of sex in thought he would have sunk as did "Doubting Peter." Peter tried it and failed. Peter had not overcome the sex in consciousness completely and was subject to the law of attraction and repulsion of the solar system; hence, he was going down to the bottom of the sea until the Master saved him.

When Jesus was crucified, "there was darkness over all the earth, and the earth did quake and the rocks were rent." This was symbolic of the darkness and night of the sex mind. Hatred was manifested in thought and consciousness. After his resurrection, St. Matthew tells us, that the saints arose from the dead and came into the Holy City and were seen by many. Our Lord triumphed over the night of death. and the hatred of the sex mind, and when he came forth in thought and consciousness from this night of death and hatred of the serpent's mind, the Saints were spiritually resurrected in thought and consciousness. They were within the holy city of spiritual purity and were spiritually visible to his Apostles and Disciples.

St. Paul says, "Present your bodies a living

sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, which is your reasonable service. And be not conformed to this world, but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good and acceptable and perfect will of God." Romans 12:1-2.

"To be conformed to this world" is to accept the lie of the serpent, that there is pleasure and life in the orgasm of the sex act. The law of this world is the lust of the flesh. The thought of the flesh is carnality, and is spiritual death, disease and insanity. It destroys the race and damns the soul. To be "transformed" by the "renewing of your mind" is to deny the lie of the serpent, that there is life and pleasure in the orgasm of the sex act. This "transformation" is through the power of the Holy Spirit. He quickens the soul to life from death of the serpent. The soul thus "transformed" does not accept the lie of the serpent that there is pleasure and life in the orgasm of the sex act, but denies the carnal senses in thought, and meditates upon spiritual truth. The soul that has thus been "transformed" has the Gospel, which is the spiritual ideas of the Father, within the consciousness of the soul, and spiritual life. "Revealed religion" is christianity, and christianity is the "transformation" of the soul from carnality to spirituality in thought. "Revelation" is the "lifting of the veil." "Revealed religion" is that state of spiritual truth wherein the veil of the sex senses has been lifted from the consciousness of the soul. The "Babbler," which is the serpent's mind, is the master of human thoughts. He is of the sex senses of the generative organs, and the lust senses of the brain. He does the



talking to the soul that causes all sin and death. He is the cause of all confusion in thought and action. The human tongue expresses in words what the "Babbler"—that is, the sex senses, says in thought to the consciousness. The senses of the generative organs speak through the tongue. When these senses of the generative organs are removed from the consciousness of the soul, the soul beholds God as the spiritual Father. This is "revealed religion," and this is Christianity.

## CHAPTER XI.

We go to the grave physically as the result of our lustful and carnal state of consciousness. When Adam and Eve yielded to lust they were told that they were taken from dust and that they should return to dust. They were told to "subdue and have dominion" over the earth; that is, the lust of the flesh. Had they obeyed this command, and had dominion over and subdued the earth, which is the lust of the flesh, their physical bodies would not have decayed; and they would not have returned to dust as physical bodies. but would have ascended out of their physical bodies as our Lord did on the Mount of Ascension, without physical death.

This is the true resurrection; and on the general day of judgment all those who have overcome the lust of the flesh and have been sanctified will undergo that Transition, and will ascend in thought to all holiness as our Lord did when he went out of his material body on the Mount of Ascension. The resurrection and the restoration of the soul, in thought from the carnal senses of the material body, is the true resurrection and the true Gospel; but the clergy are not preaching this Gospel today. They did not preach it in Jesus' day. They are preaching the carnal senses as the Gospel and the law of the flesh as life.

The two laws of thought are clearly stated by our Lord in the parables of the beggar named Lazarus, and a certain rich man. In this parable our Lord stated the law of life, which is purity

and spiritual, and the law of death, which is lust and carnality. "There was a certain rich man which was clothed in purple and fine linen and fared sumptuously every day, and there was a certain beggar named Lazarus, which was laid at his gate full of sores, and desiring to be fed with the crumbs which fell from the rich man's table; moreover the dogs came and licked his sores. And it came to pass that the beggar died and was carried by the angels into Abraham's bosom; the rich man also died and was buried; and in hell he lift up his eyes, being in torments, and seeth Abraham afar off and Lazarus in his bosom. And he cried and said, Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus, that he may dip the tip of his finger in water and cool my tongue, for I am tormented in this flame. But Abraham said: Son remember that thou in thy lifetime receivedst thy good things, and likewise Lazarus evil things, but now he is comforted and thou art tormented. And beside all this, between us and you there is a great gulf fixed; so that they which would pass from hence to you, cannot; neither can they pass to us, that would come from thence." Luke 16:19-26.

In this parable is stated the law of life and the law of death. It is the law of thought. Lazarus, the poor man died and was carried by the angels to Abraham's bosom. "It was accounted to Abraham for righteousness' sake." Righteousness is right thinking. Righteousness is spiritual ideas. Righteousness is soul thoughts. Righteousness is of the soul. Righteousness is the overcoming of carnality in thought and desire. Those who are righteous have overcome all that is lustful and carnal in thought.



Abraham was circumcised and he was commanded to circumcise all the males of his house. St. Paul says that the Jew is he who has been "circumcised inwardly." True circumcision is spiritual. Physical circumcision of the generative organs of the male is physical cleanliness and symbolic of spiritual cleanliness. Abraham was told to go into Canaan and drive out the Canaanites. The Canaanites were a carnal people, who were bowed down to idols. They were sex worshippers. All who are living in the lust of the flesh are sex worshippers.

Abraham had to drive out the Canaanites before he could inhabit the land of Canaan, the "land flowing with milk and honey." All of us have the Canaanites within us. The lust senses and the carnal desires are the Canaanites, and they must be driven out of consciousness and destroyed if we would inhabit the spiritual land flowing with milk and honey; that is, the land of the spiritual thoughts. Abraham did this. He was the true Jew. He was spiritually circumcised. Abraham was righteous and his soul became holy and non-carnal in thought. And the angels carried the poor man to the bosom of Abraham; that is, the soul of the poor man overcame the lust of the flesh and became pure and holy, and came into the same spiritual understanding of spiritual life, as the soul of Abraham had done. But the rich man was clothed in purple and fared sumptuously every day. He lived for the lust of the flesh and for the gratification of his carnal appetite. The carnal and lust senses were his gods.

"The rich man also died and was buried and in hell he lifted up his eyes." The soul of the

rich man was in the same carnal state over there as it was in this life. There was no change in thought. The state of thought is the same in the other life as it is in this life. If the soul is carnal in thought here it is carnal over there in thought. If it is spiritually dead here, it is spiritually dead over there. "And beside all of this, between us and you there is a great gulf fixed; so that they which would pass from hence to you cannot; neither can they pass to us that would come from thence." The souls who have overcome lust and gone into that life with the spiritual understanding of the Christ cannot communicate with the carnal souls that are spiritually dead over there; neither can the carnal souls that live for the lust here and pass over in that state of thought, communicate with the souls that are holy over there. They occupy two different states of thought.

Those that live for the carnal here and pass over in this state of thought, are in outer darkness over there and are spiritually dead. Their thoughts are carnal and their desires are lustful. They have the image of the beast "within their foreheads." The ideas of the lust of the flesh are written within their consciousness. Those who have overcome the lust of the flesh here are holy over here. Their souls are pure and they have the image of the Christ in their consciousness, and think spiritual thoughts and see with spiritual vision.

They are within the city of the New Jerusalem. There is no communication between them and the lost. "And there shall in no wise enter into it anything that defileth, neither whatsoever worketh abomination or maketh a lie; but they

which are written in the Lamb's book of life." Rev., 21:27. Here St. John describes the Holy City and those who inhabit it. These are they which are in Abraham's bosom. The serpent and the lust of the flesh "defileth," worketh abomination and maketh a lie;" and the serpent's mind cannot enter this Holy City, where the Lamb of God is the light and the life thereof. Nothing that is sensual and carnal can enter there. "For without are dogs and sorcerers and whoremongers and murderers and idolaters and whosoever loveth and maketh a lie." Rev., 22:15.

This is the state of the lost; they are of the serpent's mind. The lust of the flesh is a lie and all sorcerers, and whoremongers and idolaters are of the sex. The rich man "who was clothed in purple and fine linen and fared sumptuously everyday" served the lust of the flesh here and that was his state of thought over there. If we would enter the Holy City we must overcome all that "defileth" here. If we would be pure there, we must overcome lust here. We cannot live in the carnal here and have the Gospel over there. The Gospel is New ideas. These New ideas are the spiritual ideas of the Divine Mind. If we would have these New ideas and spiritual thoughts within the consciousness of the soul over there, we must overcome the lust of the flesh and carnal ideas and desires here.

We cannot pollute the body with the lust of the flesh here and degrade the soul with thoughts of carnality, and enter the Holy City of purity and spiritual life over there. We must overcome the "image of the beast" here if we would have the "image of the Christ" over there. The Christian



is he who has absolutely and completely overcome the lust of the flesh here. The Christian has overcome the mind of the serpent.

The Christian woman is not under the law of the serpent and the lust of the flesh, and is not "subject" unto the male, and does not submit her body to the gratification of the lust of the male, and her "desire" is not unto the male sexually. The Christian man is not under the law of the serpent, that man shall "leave his father and mother and cleave unto the woman and shall have dominion over her," the Christian man does not desire sexual dominion over the female. He has overcome the law of the serpent, and is living under the law of the Christ.

A Christian man is not the husband of the Christian woman, but her brother. The Christian woman is not the wife of a Christian man, but his sister. When they overcome the law of the serpent and the lust of the flesh and become holy and Christian, they are divorced from the law of the lust of the flesh and as husbands and wives, and become brothers and sisters and the children of God. If all men and women should become Christians the kingdom of Satan would end.

Purity of soul overcomes the lust of the flesh. The pure soul does not propagate through the lust of the flesh. It takes the lust of the flesh to propagate by the law of the serpent. It took centuries to produce the blessed Virgin who conceived our Lord spiritually. She was a Christian and was so pure in thought that she communed with the angels through spiritual sense and was conscious of their spiritual presence. Every Jewish woman wanted to be the mother of the Messiah. They had

been looking for his coming for centuries, and he was to be conceived spiritually. and every Jewish woman wanted this spiritual honor. They knew he was not to be conceived of the lust of the flesh. Parents were living spiritual lives for centuries, and praying that they might bring forth the girl child that would develop into the spiritual woman, and be spiritual enough to conceive spiritually and be the mother of the Messiah. It took centuries of this spiritual living to bring forth the Virgin Mary.

The opposite of this law is also true. Parents who are impure and vile bring forth impure and vile offspring. And degenerate parents bring forth degenerate offspring. Parents who are intoxicated and whose systems are poisoned with alcohol will beget the drunkard. This is the law of hereditary. The author recalls a case in point. The father was a high class drunkard. He was a social drunkard. His system was saturated with whiskey all the time and his mind inflamed with the thought and desire for whiskey when a son was begotten. The son could not go in the presence of a saloon. His desire for whiskey was so great that the smell, or the odor thereof, ran him mad with the desire to drink. The young man was strong and was determined that he would never be a drunkard. He never tasted whiskey. When walking along the street, if he approached a saloon he crossed the street and went down the street on the opposite side. He overcame the desire for liquor bequeathed to him by his father. He became an able lawyer and a man of character; but he had a battle all of his life. "The sins of the parents are visited upon the children unto the third

and fourth generation, and yea unto many generations." The "Princes of the Catholic church" understand this law.

A man whose immediate ancestors had insanity cannot be a priest. Insanity is the result of sin; that is, the result of lust in some shape or form, and where the fore parents had insanity the offspring cannot be a Catholic priest. A man to be a Catholic priest has to have a sound body physically; he cannot be diseased; they will not accept him. This was the law of the Aaron priesthood. The reason of this is that all deformity and diseases in the body come from the lust of the flesh in some form or other.

The orgasm of the sex act is a fit within itself. While the mother is carrying a child she should abstain from the sex act. By practicing the sex act while the mother is carrying a child the child is liable to be subject to fits, and, of course, to be lustful in nature. Parents should abstain from abnormal caressing while a child is being begotten and conceived. The father may caress the mother and produce a degenerate. By caressing the mother abnormally and kissing each other with the tongue, and arousing the passion within the senses of the tongue, and then begetting a child by the mother while she is in this state of thought, is liable to bring forth a child whose passion will be in the tongue instead of the generative organs when the child grows up to maturity. Again the father may caress the mother abnormally by biting her on the jaw and teasing her sexually in this abnormal way until her mind is fixed upon this state of thought. In this state of thought, they indulge sexually and a child is



conceived. When it grows up to maturity its sex desires are within the jaws instead of the generative organs.

All the race is "obsessed" with the belief that there is pleasure in the orgasm of the sex act. The race has been "obsessed" since the serpent deceived Eve. The overcoming of this thought in consciousness is the regeneration of the race. This lie of the serpent has destroyed the race in all ages. The author personally recalls a true and living case of this lie of the serpent. The person in question was a personal friend of the author. He was a man of splendid talent. Nature had given him an almost perfect body and good mind. He was handsome and attractive to the opposite sex. In early manhood he became infatuated with the lie of the serpent. He was the daily companion of women who desired their sexual passions gratified. He lived this life for many years. At forty years of age he was not only a physical wreck but mentally a child.

The body which nature carved almost perfect was destroyed. The mind which nature had endowed with first class faculties was gone. I sat by him and with heart to heart sympathized with him. The tears ran down his cheeks as he related to me the story of his life, as he would to no other person on earth. He knew I was the best friend he had in this world. He told me the whole story of his life and how the lie of the serpent had destroyed both body and mind, and in the noon-day of life when he should have been in his best years, he wanted to go away in some quiet spot and take a drug and end it all. I argued with him not to commit suicide. I said to him, "Come over

to me, my friend." He came. I said: "Put your hand on the back of my neck." He did as I told him. I said to him, "What do you find?" He said. "Why, Sidney, the back of your neck is that of a young man; there isn't a sunken place in it." I said to him, "Put your hand on the back of your own neck." He did as I told him. The back of his neck was all sunk in and gone. He realized what I meant. He broke down and wept.

The vital forces in the back of his neck had been wasted on the harlots. I said to him, "My dear boy, I am four years your senior. I was born an invalid. I have been operated on five times. The back of my neck and its condition is due to the fact that it has not been wasted on the harlots. You were born with almost a perfect body. Nature was good to you, but nature was harsh and unkind to me. You have never had an operation, yet your neck is gone and I possess a normal neck." The vital sex forces are located in the centers of the neck in the lower part of the head. His were gone. There we sat, face to face, bosom friends and companions. We loved each other. There was never two men who thought in such diametrical opposite lines and yet such bosom companions. We loved each other, yet our minds ran in opposite lines of thought. We often referred to this fact in our heart to heart talks.

I said to him, "My dear boy, my mind is clear, my body is frail, and my nervous system has been shattered as the result of five operations, but the mind that God gave me is there and you know why." He said, "Yes, Sidney, you are the essence of goodness, the sum total. You are the best man that I ever knew." I said to him, "No, I am not, I am

weak. I have fallen by the wayside. The serpent has deceived me in days past, but I have fought the battle, and I conquered." He said to me, "I only wish that I had lived the life that you have." I said to him, "I only wish nature had done for me what it has for you." But his day was over. I said to him, "You are the best living illustration of the Prodigal Son that I ever knew." "You have wasted your Father's substance upon the harlots." I made him promise me that he would leave off the harlots, reverse his course in life and start life over again. He promised me faithfully that he would; he spent the next night with a harlot and confessed it to me the following day.

He admitted he was so weak that he could not resist the influence of the harlot. He was "obsessed." His will power was gone. These are the sinners that Jesus came to seek and to save. They were on earth when he was here, and they are with us today. He cast out of their consciousness when on earth, the belief that there is pleasure in the senses of the sex act and restored unto them their will power and a normal state of mind. He cast out of their consciousness the lie of the serpent and restored them to sanity. And the Christ is with us today as he was then. He is with the race today in all truth as he was when he walked over the hills of Galilee and Judea in the Man Jesus.

If we will forsake the carnal in thought and disbelieve the lie of the serpent that there is pleasure in the orgasm of the sex act and say unto Satan, "Thou art an offense to me," and go into the closet of our own consciousness and commune with the Christ through soul sense, the spirit will flow into our consciousness until the day dawn of



the resurrection shines forth within our souls, as the light of truth. Then we can master all that is carnal and put the thoughts of the serpent under our feet, and walk in the light of the noonday of truth and realize the presence of the spirit as our guide.

It was dark in Gethsemane; it was night. The Master's blood drops there were emblematic of the night of the senses. He sweat blood. And while he prayed all of his disciples went to sleep. While he struggled with the last battle of the serpent in thought and consciousness, they went to sleep in the senses. His suffering there was emblematic of the struggling of the senses. It was night. The mind of the serpent is night, but he overcame the mind of the serpent, and hence arose on the morning of the resurrection. He arose as the day was dawning. This was emblematic of spiritual truth. It was the symbol of the light of the spirit.

We must all go through the night of Gethsemane, and we must conquer as he did in the Garden of Gethsemane, then we will rise with the day dawn of the resurrection. We must overcome the "obsession" of the carnal if we would be resurrected with the spirit. The night of the "obsession" of the serpent must go out of our consciousness, if the day dawn of the morning of the resurrection would rise within our consciousness. We must overcome the night of the "obsession" of the serpent if we would realize the day dawn of the morning of the resurrection within our souls.

The "obsession" of the serpent has all the race in charge. This "obsession" of the serpent mesmerizes the race, and creates confusion, and the strife of the nations. The mesmerism of the ser-

pent creates the confusion of the nations and produces the wars of the nations. The young become mesmerized by the serpent. They become "obsessed." Some through this "obsession," marry early in life, and the young mother before she is twenty-five years of age is an old woman. And the husband before he is thirty is an old man. They destroy themselves through the "obsession" of the serpent. The serpent "obsesses" others, unnaturally. Some of the young, through this "obsession," begin to practice self abuse. The brain is soon destroyed. They never develop to mature men and women. They die prematurely in life or fill the insane asylums. Those who are thus "obsessed" violate nature's laws, if they become fathers and mothers they produce the feeble minded and the insane as their offspring.

The insane asylums are filled with the fruition of the "obsession" of the serpent. Some who have been "obsessed" by the serpent contract private diseases and then marry later in life. They give these diseases to their wives in a secondary stage. Children are born. They come blind, deaf and dumb and diseased. This is the fruition of the "obsession" of the serpent. There is but one remedy for the ills of the race. There is but one cure for the diseases and insanity of the race and that is the Christ mind within the consciousness of the race. Purity will eliminate all the diseases of the race, and save the race.

When the race shall walk with the Christ in thought and consciousness, and shall be able to say to Satan, "Get thee behind me, Satan, thou art an offense unto me," there will be no more disease and no more insanity. The race will then be pure

in soul and in mind and in body. The Christ mind within the consciousness of the souls of the race will dispossess the race in the serpent's mind, and heal and save the race, spiritually, mentally and physically. When the race shall walk with the Christ in thought and consciousness until the orgasm of the sex act shall be an offense unto the race, there will be no more sickness, no more insanity and no more death.

The Christ mind is the only remedy for the disease and insanity of the race. We reach this Christ mind, and the Christ state of consciousness, by denying the senses of the flesh and communing with God as spirit through soul and spiritual sense, until we are at one with him in thought and consciousness. This is Christianity. And Christianity is the only physician that will ever heal the race and save the race spiritually, mentally and physically. I hope those who shall read this book and my other books on the Bible as the days and years come and go will see that they are passed on to future generations and are circulated everywhere to the race, because I know that the truth as the Christ taught it is the only remedy for the sins and diseases of the race. The true Church is the Scriptural Church, and the Scriptural Church is the Church that teaches the truth as the Christ taught it, and this truth is, that there can be nothing spiritual within the carnal senses and that there is not anything spiritual connected with the relation of the sexes, and that the carnal relation between the sexes must finally be overcome for the soul to overcome the carnality and death of the flesh.

Marriage is the natural state through which



the lust of the flesh shall be indulged, but the natural state is not the spiritual state. If they cannot contain, they should marry. But this is the natural and not the spiritual state. This may be my last. I don't know. I therefore hope that those who read this book and my other books on the Bible, will see that they are preserved and circulated among the people of the earth, that the races in darkness may know the truth as the Christ taught it, that they may know what Christianity is, and may know that it is not of the carnal senses. Sex worship is with us today as of old. It is just as real in our so called Christian Churches today as it was in the pagan temples of Babylon and Ninevah thousands of years ago. It has prevailed in all ages, and it prevails today as the current thought and the religion and the worship of the race.

In our so-called Christian churches, the young and virile of both sexes are hired to sing and to sound forth the notes of the senses. Their music is the music of the senses. Their notes are the notes of carnality, and with this music of the senses, they mesmerize the congregation with their sex magnetism. This is sex worship. It is the religion of the senses. The old and the saintly are not in the choirs of the churches of the so-called Christian Churches. Their sex forces are gone; they could not hypnotize and mesmerize the congregation. Their day of sex worship is over. They are spiritual; hence, the notes of their music are not needed in these temples of sex worship and paganism. The temples of sex worship of Babylon, Sodom and Gomorrah and Ninevah had the same system of music and the same notes of the senses that we

have today in our so-called Christian churches. But the Christians had no part in this system of paganism; these Christians of the early church were spiritual in their worship. They had no paid choirs; no young and virile singing forth their sex worship in the congregation. They met in humble places and there the old as well as the middle aged chanted the Psalms of David. Their notes were spiritual and their notes were of soul. They had no paid ministers, well sexed and virile, to charm and mesmerize them through the sex forces. These primitive Christians had a Board of Elders, and one of these Elders presided at the meeting of the Saints. He read an extract from one of the Gospels or a letter from one of the Apostles, or an extract from one of the prophets or one of the Psalms as "spiritual lessons." Then they chanted one of the psalms and then went into silence. There they sat for hours in silence, commanding all the "earth," that is, the carnal senses, to be still, that they might commune with God through soul and spiritual sense. After spending hours in this silent communion until their souls had silenced the senses of the flesh and communed with God through spiritual sense, they would chant another psalm and then eat the bread and drink the wine as a holy communion and adjourn.

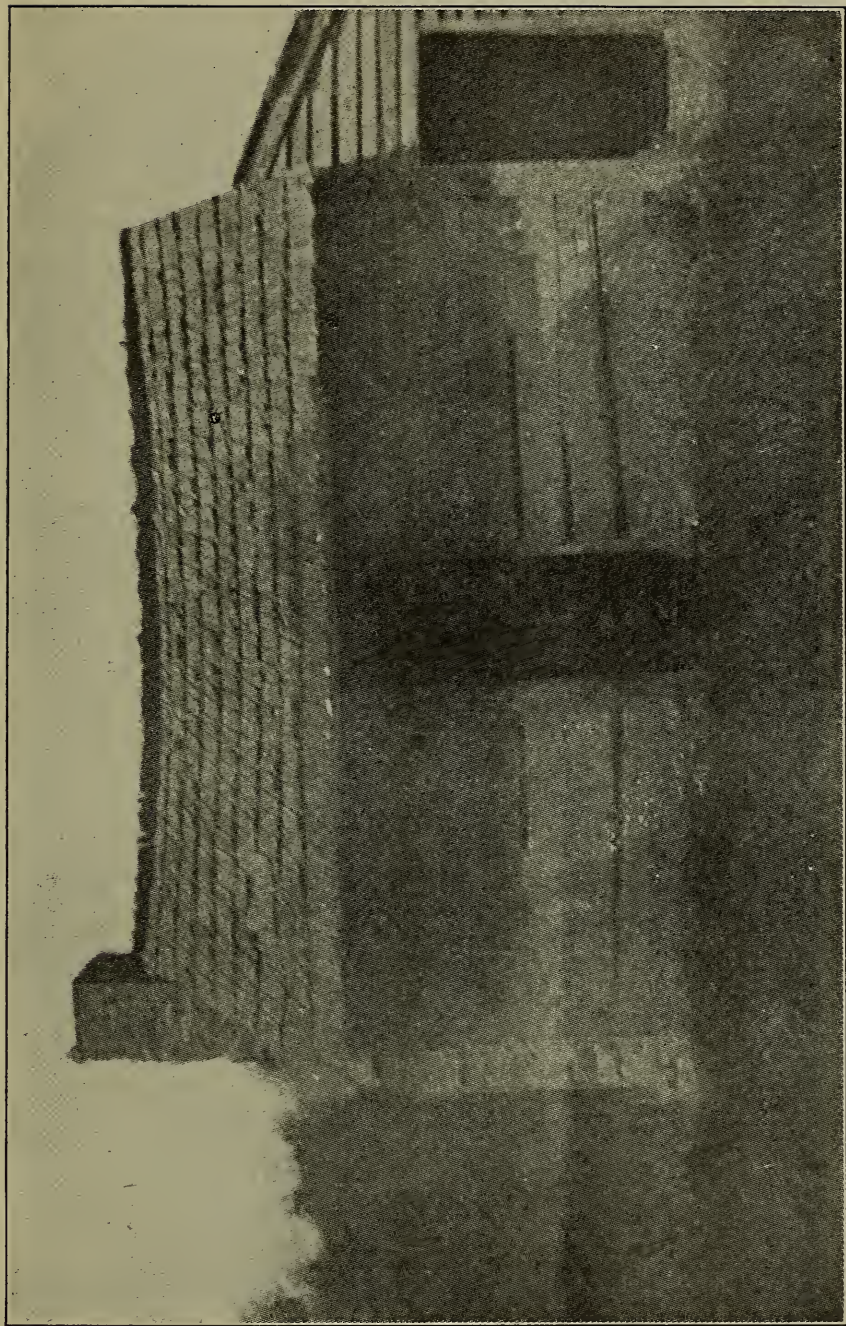
There was no mesmerism of the serpent in their worship. They were Christians and their worship was of soul senses. They were pure in heart themselves hence they could teach the truth as to sin. In our so-called Christian churches today, which are temples of sex worship, the truth of Christianity could not be taught. The people are mesmerized through the senses. Their con-

sciousness is carnal in thought. They are too impure in thought. They are in the same state of thought that the people of Nazareth were when Jesus returned there to preach the Gospel to them. They were impure in thought and would not hear him. They drove Him out of Nazareth.

The people who congregate in our so-called churches today, which are temples of worship, would not hear the Gospel; they are mesmerized by the serpent. If you would attempt to teach them the Gospel they would turn on you. Their state of thought would not receive it. The Psalmist says, "To the pure all things are pure." Paul says the same thing. Only the pure receive the Gospel. Only the pure will let you tell them what sin is. You can only teach the gospel to the pure in heart. Those who are carnal minded are mesmerized through their sex forces, and will not receive the spiritual ideas of God within the consciousness of their souls. The spiritual ideas of God is the Gospel, and all sex mesmerism must be overcome in thought and consciousness for the soul to come into the consciousness of the spiritual ideas of God, as the Gospel.

The Author knows of cases where the sex passions of the female have been within the breast. Of course, this was produced by the abnormal condition and law under which the child was begotten and conceived. A reputable physician who is a personal friend of the Author tells him that he knows of a case where the sex passion was in the foot instead of the generative organs. This condition was produced by a perversion of the law of human thought. This law is dealt with by the prophets. "Oh thou with lolling tongue," declares the prophet.





THE LITTLE LOG SCHOOLHOUSE NEAR EFFLAND, ORANGE COUNTY, N.C., WHERE  
SIDNEY C. TAPP BEGAN HIS EDUCATION.

## CHAPTER XII.

Sin is within the lust senses of the tongue as well as the generative organs and brain. The tongue and the lust senses of the brain and the lust senses of the generative organs are all connected up by the sympathetic nerve system, and you can produce any state of thought and carnal desire that provision may direct, and the offspring will pay the penalty therefore. Parents should understand this law and should observe it. Parents should not violate any natural law in thought or act. when children are being begotten and conceived. They should be spiritual. Parents should take time for meditation, spiritual thought and prayer before begetting and conceiving a child.

Months should be spent in spiritual meditation before a child is begotten and conceived. The parents should have as little lust within their consciousness as possible, when a child is being begotten and conceived. We have this law demonstrated all through the Bible. Samuel's parents were spiritual. His parents walked in the "ordinances and statutes" of God, and the "ordinances and statutes" of God are spiritual. In this state of thought they brought forth a child that was a "power in Israel." Abraham and Sarah, through spiritual meditation and communion with God, brought forth Isaac, and Isaac through spirituality and spiritual meditation brought forth Jacob.

Samuel's parents lived in spiritual meditation, that the child might be of spiritual power. The



parents of John the Baptist walked in all the "ordinances and statutes of God." They lived in continuous spiritual communication with God; and they brought forth John the Baptist, who was to be the forerunner of the Christ. It takes spiritual parents to produce spiritual children. This is the law of Truth. Carnal parents produce carnal children. This is the law of evil. Young married people entering life should know this law and should understand the teachings of the Bible upon this truth. They should know how to bring pure and spiritual minded children into the world. But when the truth is reached in the absolute, and lust is overcome completely and the parents become Christians, then they cease to propagate through the lust of the flesh.

The parents of John the Baptist almost reached the Truth in thought and consciousness, and almost became Christians. There was very little lust within their thought when John the Baptist was being begotten and conceived; but there was some lust within the consciousness of their souls when they begot and conceived John the Baptist; hence Jesus said, "Of those that are born of woman, there is not a greater than John the Baptist, but the least in the Kingdom of Heaven is greater than he." In other words Jesus said John the Baptist's conception had less lust connected with it than any other natural conception up to his days, and yet it was not a Christian conception; in other words, that John the Baptist's parents were the most spiritual and had less lust within the consciousness of their souls than any two who had begotten and conceived a child up to the date of John the Baptist's conception, and therefore there was



none greater than he that were conceived of lust. His parents were spiritual, indeed; they had almost overcome the serpent in thought, and lust within the consciousness of their souls when they begot and conceived John the Baptist; but there was some lust within their consciousness when he was begotten, hence, Jesus said, "that the least in the Kingdom of Heaven was greater than he."

There is no lust in Heaven. Heaven is the spiritual state of the soul, and there is no lust in thought there. But the blessed Virgin who was the mother of our Lord, overcame lust completely and conceived spiritually. She was a Christian. A Christian conception is a non-lustful conception. Jesus was not the Christ until he overcame lust completely at thirty years of age, and then he was annointed, and annointed means, the "life of God." The soul that has been annointed has overcome the mind of the serpent and lust completely in thought and consciousness, and neither "marry nor is given in marriage" nor begets nor conceives through the lust of the flesh. Jesus was the Christ because he was the "life," and he was the "life" because he had overcome death, which is the lust of the flesh.

There was no death until the lust of the flesh entered into consciousness and into thought; and when this is overcome, death is overcome. There was no "marrying and giving in marriage" and begetting and conceiving through the lust of the flesh until lust was yielded to in thought. When lust is overcome, death will be overcome, and they will neither "marry nor be given in marriage," and the kingdom of Heaven will be at hand.

A Christian race would end carnal propogation. All carnal propogation has its origin in the lustful

“imagination” of sex brain and these lustful ideas are bequeathed to the souls of the offspring, hence, all are “conceived in sin and shaped in iniquity. But I am asked, “How would you populate the earth?” I am not interested in how you are going to populate the earth; but I am interested in how you are going to populate Heaven. “Earth,” in the Bible, means the lust of the flesh; it means the carnal and corporeal man, and the “Earthly” population must cease before Heaven can be populated.

All of this “Earthly” or carnal creation must be “born again,” or re-created before it can get into Heaven. The lust of the flesh must be overcome before the soul will know God. The population of Heaven begins where the depopulation of the earth begins, or the carnal creation ends. The spiritual creation and the population of Heaven is not dependent upon the existence of this carnal creation. The inhabitants of Heaven are spiritually conceived. All that is in Heaven is mind, and is spiritually conceived; and the soul must overcome the lust of the flesh to enter that state of thought. If the race should become Christians, the carnal creation would end, and the kingdom of Heaven, which is the image of the Father within the soul, would be ushered into consciousness. The pagan theological dogma “that all birth is painful” is not true; all carnal birth is painful, because it is of lust and death; but the spiritual birth, which is the Christian birth, is holy and life eternal. It is not painful, but an eternal joy. The carnal creation and the carnal birth must end before the spiritual and the Christian birth can be realized. The “earth,” that is, the lust of the flesh, must be depopulated before Heaven can be populated, that is, the spiritual birth

realized. The end of Satan's Kingdom (the lust of the flesh and carnal propogation) is the beginning of the Christ Kingdom. The end of death is the beginning of life. When the race, as a race, shall have overcome lust, it will be ushered into the kingdom of God.

When the race, as a race, shall have overcome death, it will have life. When the serpent's mind is lost in consciousness, the Christ mind will be realized. When the night of death is overcome, the light of eternal day will be realized. The Kingdom of Heaven can never come until the Kingdom of Satan and the lust of the serpent are banished from the consciousness of the souls of men.

"How art thou fallen from Heaven, oh Lucifer, son of the morning, how art thou cut down to the ground, which did weaken the nations. For thou hast said in thine heart, I will ascend into Heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God; I will sit also upon the Mount of the congregation, in the sides of the north. I will ascend above the heights of the clouds, I will be like the most High. Yet thou shall be brought down to hell, to the sides of the pit. They that see thee, shall narrowly look upon thee and consider thee saying, is this the man that made the earth to tremble. that did shake kingdoms; that made the world as a wilderness and destroyed the cities thereof; that opened not the house of his prisoners." Isaiah 14:12-17.

Lucifer here, in the original, means "Day Star," that is, the Light of Truth. He represents in thought the Truth of Spirit, before the fall. After the fall he represents the Error of lust and the darkness of sensuality. Before the fall he represents Truth, which is the spiritual ideas of God.



After the fall he represents Error, which is the carnal ideas of the lust of the flesh. He represents, after the fall, the lust of the devil, which our Master spoke of in John 8:44, when he said, "The devil abode not in the truth." After the fall he represents that state of thought which St. Peter refers to when he says, "The angels that sinned were cast down to hell." This hell is the lust of the flesh and is located within the sex brain. The thought and mind of the sex brain is "this man" that "made the earth to tremble," and that did "shake the kingdoms," but that made the "world as a wilderness and destroyed the cities thereof," that "opened not the house of his prisoners." Every Hebrew woman wanted to be the mother of our Lord, but to be the mother of our Lord, lust had to be overcome. The Blessed Virgin did this and became a Christian and conceived spiritually.

The mind of the sex brain of the race has produced war and strife in all ages and destroyed the kingdoms and the nations of the earth. The kingdoms of the earth are builded on the carnal senses and are destroyed by the sex senses and the lust senses of the brain. Human dynasties, human clans and family trees are builded on the carnal senses and are destroyed by the sex brain of the race. They are of carnality and are destroyed by carnality. The age in which I write, it is conservatively estimated that over 80 per cent of the men are diseased in some form or another from "private diseases," and that over 55 per cent of the married women are diseased, either in a first or second state, from the sex sins of their husbands.

It is estimated that 35 per cent of girls at 17 years of age, in cities of 50,000 population and up,

have lost their virtue. and that 25 per cent of them in cities of 50,000 and up are diseased with "private diseases." That over 90 per cent of the human race, during some age of life, have practiced "self abuse" more or less, and over 50 per cent have practiced "self abuse" until it is injurious to some degree, and over 25 per cent have practiced "self abuse" until it is materially injurious; that over 95 per cent of the human race are "tainted" with syphilis, and over 50 per cent are "tainted" with syphilitic conditions until it is more or less injurious, and over 25 per cent of the human family have syphilific germs within their brain cells to the extent that it is materially injurious to the body and mind. That over 95 per cent of the human race, in some form or another, either directly or indirectly, are tainted with syphilis or gonorrhea. Liver troubles, stomach trouble, kidney trouble, heart trouble, nervous trouble, insanity and all forms of diseases afflict the human family through the serpent—gonorrhea and syphilis are manifested everywhere in the human race.

"This is the man that has made the world a wilderness and destroyed the cities thereof." Lust has made the world a wilderness and destroyed the cities of the carnal senses. At times in history it has almost depopulated the earth.

While I write all Europe is at each other's throats; blood flows and men fall thick and fast, dead. "This is the man (the sex brain) that made the earth to tremble and did shake the kingdoms." He is the serpent that was in Eden, and he is within the sex brain of the race and is making the kingdoms of the earth "shake" today, as he has in all ages. And as he will continue to do until the

mind of the serpent and lust is overcome by the race, he will continue to make the "kingdoms of the earth shake" until the kingdom of God comes.

This devil which has made the "kingdoms of the earth shake" is presumptuous. Job 1:6; Matt. 6:5-6. He is proud. Tim. 1:2-3. He is wicked. First John 2:13. He is malignant. Job 1:9-2-4. He is cruel. Lu. 8:29-9:39; First Peter 5:8. All presumption of human nature is within the sex brain. All pride is within the sex. The wickedness of the human heart is within the sex. All hatred is within the sex. So we see that the power of this man, which does make the "kingdoms of the earth shake," is located within the sex brain and the lust senses. This is the devil within us. This is the devil that is producing the strife and conflict of the race. This is the devil that is causing the man to murder the woman, and the woman to murder the man, the wife to kill the husband and the husband to kill the wife.

This is the devil that is producing the diseases and insanity of the race. This is the devil that finally must be overcome for us to return to God and be the children of God. This devil, which is the lust of the flesh, is the "earth" that man was told to "subdue" and have "dominion" over. "Heaven is God's throne and the earth is his footstool." "Heaven" here is a holy state of thought; it is the soul in the image of God. Holiness is God's state of consciousness and holiness is his throne, and from this throne his spiritual ideas come forth as the life of his children whom he made in his image. The "earth" here is the carnality and the lust of the flesh and is his "footstool."

"Righteousness" shall finally conquer "un-



righteousness" and all that is evil and lustful shall be cast down to the hell of darkness and death. This is God's "footstool." Jesus said, "I have glorified thee on the earth, I have finished the work which thou gavest me to do." John 17:4. The "earth" here is the lust of the flesh. Jesus came as a man in flesh, sexed as all other men, and overcome lust and death, and became the "life." He said, "I am the resurrection and the life." He was the "resurrection and the life" because he came in the flesh, sexed as all other men, and overcame the lust of the flesh and death. "All the earth is corrupt." "All the earth" here is all flesh. For we are told elsewhere in the Holy Scripture "That all flesh became corrupt." All corruption is within the lust of the flesh.

Lust produces corruption in thought and disease and corruption in the body. The inanimate earth is not corrupt. It has no consciousness; it does not think. There can be no corruption without thought.

When the "earth" became corrupt, it was the carnal man that was corrupt, and he was corrupt because he was lustful. When God destroyed "All the earth" by the flood, it was not the material earth, but it was a lustful and a degenerate race. It was the lust of the flesh that was corrupt, and it was a lustful race and a carnal generation that God destroyed as a "corrupt earth."

Our Lord, when he came forth from the grave, said to Mary Magdalene, "Touch me not." He said he had not as yet ascended to his father. He would not have objected to having been touched by the saintly Apostle John, or by the stuttering and stumbling Peter. They were of his sex. He had

cast seven devils out of Mary Magdalene, and purified her soul, yet he objected to being touched by her. He had not yet ascended. And so with us as the morning of the resurrection dawns within our souls, we cannot stand the carnal in thought with the opposite sex.

If we would ascend completely out of the carnal into the spiritual, as our Lord did, we, too, must object to being touched in thought by the opposite sex. As the morning of the resurrection dawns within our consciousness, all that is carnal, darkness and night, disappears from consciousness. To ascend completely from the night of the carnal into the light of day, in thought and consciousness, we must be above the mortal and the material of the opposite sex in thought. This was the state of our Lord in thought and consciousness when he ascended. Hence, he said to Mary Magdalene, "touch me not, I have not yet ascended."

"In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth." Gen. 1:1. In the very first verse of the first chapter of the Bible we have the dual creation. We have the law of dual thought in the first verse of the first chapter of Genesis. "Heaven" here is the soul in the image of God. It is the spiritual creation. It is "Righteousness." It is "holiness." It is non-carnality in thought. The "earth" here is the creation of the senses. It is matter and is symbolic of the lust of the flesh. It is the carnal man with his lust nature, and this is the "earth" that became "corrupt," and this is the "earth" that finally must be overcome for the kingdom of God to come; that is, for the spiritual creation to be realized in thought and consciousness. After the first verse in the first chapter of Genesis follows the spiritual

creation, and in the second chapter follows the material creation.

We have this "heaven" and "earth" in the first chapter of Genesis, and all through the Bible, to the last chapter of Revelation. In the last chapter of Revelation, we have the "heaven" in the first chapter of Genesis, as the "New Jerusalem" and the "Holy City." "And there shall in no wise enter into it anything that defileth, neither whatsoever worketh abomination or maketh a lie; but they which are written in the Lamb's book of life." Rev. 21:27. This is the state of the saints and the redeemed, and this the "Heaven" in the first verse, first chapter of Genesis that God created in the beginning.

The "earth" in the first verse, first chapter of Genesis is symbolic of the carnal man with his lust nature. All who do not overcome the carnality of the "earthly" creation do not enter the "holy city." They do not have the "image of God," that is, the spiritual ideas of God within their consciousness; but the "image of the beast" "within their foreheads," that is, the ideas of the lust of the flesh within the consciousness of their souls. They are without the "Holy City." They are in a state of carnal consciousness. "For without are dogs and sorcerers and whoremongers and murderers and idolaters and whosoever loveth and maketh a lie." Rev. 22:15. This is lust and carnality within the consciousness of the soul. It is spiritual night. It is hell.

Babel means "confusion;" they are of the "earth" and in the city of confusion. Baal means "master," "possessor" and "owner." Baal was the local diety of the Canaanites. Baal is the male god of sex worship. Baal is the sex mind. Astraroth is the fe-



male god of sex worship. These two gods constitute the city of sex worship, the city of sex lust. All who have not overcome the "earth," that is, the lust of the flesh, are in this city of darkness. They are whoremongers, murderers, dogs and liars in thought. This is hell; it is the state of the lost. "And he which is filthy, let him be filthy still." Rev. 22:11.

All filth in thought, as well as material, is within the sex. All who have not overcome the lust of the flesh are "filthy." We have two creations in the first verse, first chapter of Genesis, the creation of "good and evil." Good is of spirit, and evil is of the carnal senses. Good is heaven, and evil is hell. Heaven and hell are matters of thought. In the last chapter of Revelation we have these two same creations, the spiritual creation, redeemed, which is holy. This creation is composed of the souls who have overcome the lust of the flesh. They have "subdued" and had "dominion" over the "earth," that is, they have overcome carnality, and they "follow the lamb whithersoever he goeth." They are in the Christ mind in thought and are "undefiled." Those "without" are dogs, whoremongers, adulterers and liars. They have not been redeemed from the "earthly" creation. They have not been redeemed from the "earth." They still have the earthly creation and the carnal within their minds and thoughts.

The redeemed "are they which were not defiled with women, for they are the virgins." These are they which follow the Lamb, whithersoever he goeth. "These were redeemed from among men, being the first fruits unto God and unto the Lamb." The redeemed from among men are not "defiled."

All "defilement" is of the lust of the flesh. The orgasm of the sex act is the essence of the "defilement" of body, mind and soul.

When the race becomes virgins spiritually, it will be "undefiled." It is the sex act in thought and act that "defiles" the race. It is "self abuse" that "defiles" the race. It is carnality which "defiles" the race in thought. When the soul is redeemed from lust, it is not "defiled." It is a virgin. "Thou hast a few names even in Sardis, which have not defiled their garments." Rev. 3:4. The mind should be so pure in thought as not to "defile the garments," the body nor the bed, with the generative seed.

The mind can become so impure in thought as to "defile" the body, the garments and the bed, by emitting the generative seed without the sex act. This is mental "self abuse," fornication and adultery, and is more wicked and sinful than the sex act itself. This state of thought prevents the soul from seeing God with the eye of spiritual thought. It takes a pure soul to spiritually discern the ideas of God. It takes the "pure in heart" to be conscious of the presence of God.

The "pure in heart" and the holy in thought can spiritually discern the presence of God. God is holy, and God is mind, and for the soul to mentally see and to realize the presence of God, the soul must be holy and pure in thought. It must be "undefiled." Hence, our Lord said, "Blessed are the pure in heart, for they shall see God." Only the pure in heart, that is, in thought, can spiritually discern God through spiritual sense. Soul sense is spiritually discerned. And only those are pure in heart who have become so pure in thought as not to "de-

file their garments" with the seed of the generative act. The impure in heart "defile their garments." They have no consciousness of God.

Our Lord was "undefiled." He was God within the flesh, that is, he came within the flesh and was sexed as all other men and lived so pure and non-carnal in thought that he never lost the generative fluid. His thoughts were so pure and non-carnal and his soul was so pure that he never emitted the seed of the sex act. This made him the "sinless son of God." Saint John says: "He that is born of God cannot sin, for his seed remains within him." We shall be the sons of God when we shall become as sinless as our Lord was. When we shall have become so pure in thought that we can live in the flesh and retain the seed of the generative fluid in our bodies, without emitting the same, we shall be the sons of God, and in this state of thought we can ascend out of the material body. This is the resurrection and the life eternal.

Jesus was the only man that ever reached this degree of spiritual perfection and holiness. In this state of purity there is no death. By this law of purity he healed the sick, opened the ears of the deaf, loosed the tongue of the dumb, opened the eyes of the blind and raised the dead. He overcame the carnal in thought. His soul was so pure that the belief of pleasure within the orgasm of the sex act was removed from the consciousness of his soul. The belief in the pleasure of the senses is a lie. The supreme lie of the serpent is the belief that there is pleasure in the orgasm of the sex act. All the sorrow of the race has come from this lie. The belief of this lie is death. It has "defiled" the race.



Babylon in thought, is the orgasm of the sex act. All die in Babylon. The race is diseased as the result of Babylon. Purity does not consist in refraining in form from the sex act. Purity consists in overcoming in thought and consciousness the desire to commit the sex act. The Author personally now has in mind an aged lady. She is a lady of refinement and social position. She has been sensual all her life. In old age she is desirous of having boys and young men around her. A young man from eighteen to twenty-five, who is handsome and well developed, cannot come near her unless she wants to kiss him. She wants to kiss every young man who comes around her, who is handsome and well formed. She has Babylon within the consciousness of her soul. She is diseased.

These cases are around us daily. They are everywhere, and have been in all ages, and will be until the race becomes pure. The Author personally recalls an old man who wants to put his hands on every young girl and every young lady that comes around him. He is refined, as the world would call it; he has academic culture, but he is coarse in thought, and his mind is impure. His mind is defiled and his flesh is coarse as the result of his thoughts. These cases are everywhere. All the race is committing self abuse, adultery and fornication in thought; hence Jesus said, "unless ye repent ye shall all likewise perish."

Humanity "has sinned" and come short of the law of God; that is, humanity is lustful in nature and impure in thought, and the flesh of the race is "defiled." If the race were pure in thought, the race would be healthy. A sinful race is a diseased race. A lustful race is a "defiled" race, hence

all the race is defiled and diseased. The only thing that will keep the bodies of the race free from disease is purity of mind. When the race thinks right it will not be diseased, and to think right is to overcome lust.

Parents should lose no time in watching their children at the age when they come into puberty. This is the time when manhood and womanhood is destroyed. Your child at that age has the same lust desires and evil thoughts as the remainder of a fallen race. Your child will yield to the lust of the flesh as all other children of that age. Your child is liable to commit "self abuse" at that age and become diseased in body and mind. Your child is no exception to the rule of the lust of human nature.

All flesh is the same, and all flesh is lustful and sinful at the age of puberty. Your child is liable to contract syphilis and gonorrhea at that age, as other children. Your child is made of the same flesh and blood as other children, and all children come into the "evil days" at the age of puberty. Parents, be careful, watch them at that age, keep them pure. You owe this to yourself and to your offspring and to God.

All impurity is within the sex brain and the sex thoughts. Jesus said, "Do not give that which is holy to dogs." The dog is a sensual animal. In the Bible, he is used as a type of lust and sensuality. In Revelation, he is used to type, in thought, the state of the lost. The dog is used as the type of the sensual in thought. The sensual minded cannot understand that which is spiritual. The carnal minded will not accept that which is spiritual. Those who are living for the lust of the flesh will not accept Christianity. Christianity is holiness, and

holiness is the spiritual ideas of God and life. Hence, our Lord said, "Do not give that which is holy to the dogs," they will not accept it. You must be willing to surrender carnality before you can accept Christianity. You must be willing to give up lust before you accept that which is holy. Jesus said, "Do not cast your pearls before swine." The swine is a hog and used in the Bible to type sensuality. He is a sensual animal. The Orthodox Jew will not eat swine or pork. This is the reason. Swine is carnal in its nature and, as food, produces carnal flesh in the consumer.

The food we eat determines to a large degree our state of thought. If we eat pork or hog meat and the lower animals as food, we become carnal in thought; hence, the vegetarian system of food. Its purpose is to reduce the carnal in thought. The swine is one of the lowest types of the animal creation. He is very carnal as an animal. When Jesus cast the devils out of the "Mad man" they went into the swine. They were at home there. Devils are carnal thoughts and the swine is carnal in his nature. These devils were in their own habitation when they were within the swine. Pearls type that which is pure. That is purity in thought. The Holy City of the New Jerusalem in Revelation is symbolized through the metal gold.

Jesus meant by this parable, "Do not cast your pearls before swine," to not give spiritualized ideas to the carnal minded. They will not accept them. It is useless to waste time and energy in an effort to teach the carnal minded spiritual ideas. It is useless to attempt to teach the carnal minded the truth of the Bible. It is useless to attempt to teach the impure purity, unless they are



willing to surrender impurity and to become pure. Carnality must be surrendered for spirituality to be obtained. Jesus said, "It is more blessed to give than to receive." All selfishness is within the carnal mind and the lust of the flesh and the sex brain. Greed and selfishness are within the sex mind. He that overcomes this is generous and kind. He has charity for all. He is unselfish, hence Jesus said, "It is more blessed to give than to receive."

Jesus said, "Let not your right hand know what your left hand doeth." The carnal mind is vain. It lives for self adoration; it will give to the poor, not for the poor's sake, but for self glory. The sex mind has no pure charity. It is all self adoration. He that has overcome this mind is a Christian. He does not desire self adoration. He does good for the sake of good, hence Jesus said, "Do not let your right hand know what your left hand doeth." Again Jesus said. "A man's enemies shall be they of his own household." This is true. If a man is spiritual and his wife is lustful, she is his enemy. If she is spiritual and becomes a Christian and is living for the spiritual, he is her enemy.

Here is where the friction in household begins. The father and mother will become the enemies of the child on this question. Sex is the parting of the ways in thought. Domestic troubles have their origin within the sex. When they are mated sexually, they will remain together until they indulge and destroy each other. When they are not mated sexually, there is domestic friction and separation. The divorce courts are the homes of sex troubles. Jesus said, "Let the dead bury their dead." All of the carnal minded are spiritually dead. They have no spiritual insight and no spiritual understanding.

They are not conscious of the presence of God as spiritual Being. They do not discern his spiritual ideas. It is this state of consciousness that produces death. It was the serpent and the lust of the flesh that produced death.

Carnality is death. Jesus said, "Let the dead bury their dead." That is, lust is the Father of death, and those who are in this state of thought are dead and should bury the dead. Again he said, "The blind lead the blind, and both fall into the ditch." All who are carnal minded are spiritually blind. The serpent's mind destroys the sight of the spiritual ideas of the soul. Those that are carnal minded are spiritually blind, and they are leading the carnal minded, who are spiritually blind, and both go into the ditch together—that is, to spiritual destruction. Jesus said, "Except you become as a little child you can no wise enter the Kingdom of Heaven." The little child has no sex consciousness, it has not reached the age of puberty. The "Evil days" have not come. It is innocent of the serpent's mind and death.

All must overcome the serpent's mind and the lust of the flesh to enter the Kingdom of Heaven—that is, to enter that state of spiritual thought wherein the soul knows God spiritually and can discern him and his presence with spiritual sense. Again Jesus said: "Some men were born Eunuchs and some men are made Eunuchs of men, and some men make themselves Eunuchs for the kingdom of Heaven's sake." A Eunuch is one who has been castrated. He has been deprived of his sex brain. Some men are deprived of this faculty by men physically. Others are born without this faculty from their mother's womb, but those who enter the

kingdom of Heaven have become spiritual Eunuchs. They have overcome the carnal in thought and desire. None enter the kingdom of Heaven except Eunuchs—spiritual Eunuchs. Nothing that is carnal can enter there. Heaven is the state of the soul wherein purity is the law of thought.

Emasculation will not make the soul pure. Origin, the great scholar of the early church fathers, emasculated himself. He read what the Master said upon this question, and the battle between the soul and carnality was so great with him, that he committed violence on his own person, and he emasculated himself. But physical emasculation will not make the soul pure. The soul must become pure in thought. Its ideas must be spiritual ideas and not carnal ideas; its thoughts spiritual thoughts and not carnal thoughts for the soul to enter Heaven.

Heaven is the state of thought wherein the soul only knows spiritual sense. All of the sayings of the Master were based on the law of carnality and the law of spirituality. When the Master spoke the parable of the great feast, where many were invited and all gave excuses, he had in mind the law of the flesh and the law of the spirit. The feast was a spiritual feast. All gave excuses. None could attend. The great supper was there, the table was loaded down with spiritual food, it was the "tree of life," it was the Christ mind. They were invited to this banquet that their souls might eat and live. The food was spiritual food, it was the manna of Heaven—it was God's spiritual ideas, but they all gave excuses; some had this thing to do, and others had that thing to do, and all begged to be excused. Sex was the excuse of the last man. But the last man did not beg to be excused, he said



he had married him a wife and he could not come. It was not a question of excuse with him. It was a question of Impossibility. He had married a wife and it was Impossible to attend the banquet of a spiritual feast.

His feast was carnality, it was that feast which made Adam say to Eve, "This is bone of my bone and flesh of my flesh." This was the serpent's mind, and this mind of the lust of the flesh drove them out of Eden, which was the spiritual image of the Father, and produced death and caused the woman the "desire to be unto her husband" and "gave him" sexual "dominion" over her. This was the feast that the man who had married him a wife had at home. He could not attend the heavenly feast for his soul had not fed upon the spiritual manna of Heaven, and had not drunk of the water of Eternal life. His desires were carnal and his thoughts were lustful and his soul was "defiled" and "polluted." He did not ask to be excused. He simply Could not Come; he had married him a wife and that settled the question.

None will attend the feast of the soul until they have overcome the lust of the flesh. None want life until they have overcome death, hence Jesus told the good servant to go out into the "highways and byways" and bring in the "lame and the halt" and the "poor and the humble" that they might eat of the bread of life, that they might feast their souls upon spiritual ideas. And he said at the great day that none of those who had been invited and declined to attend the feast would be at the "great feast" which will be the general judgment and eternal spiritual life. None of those who are following the appetites of the lust of the flesh will be at the

“great feast” in the general judgment day. There will not be any at the “great feast” on that day except those who have overcome the lust of the flesh—only those who have overcome carnal desires and lustful appetites on that day will have the “image of the Father” and spiritual understanding within the consciousness of their souls.

## CHAPTER XIII.

Those who have not overcome the lust of the flesh will be "obsessed" and "possessed" with carnal ideas. They will still be "besieged" and within the grasp of the lust of the flesh in thought and desire. The mere overcoming the lust of the flesh in act will not give the soul spiritual life. The lust of the flesh must be overcome in thought and consciousness for the soul to have spiritual life and spiritual understanding.

The Author recalls personally a maiden lady who was pure physically; she had preserved her physical virtue. Yet in her consciousness she felt that she had missed something in life. She felt that she had missed wifhood and motherhood. She had not overcome the senses; she was not pure in thought and consciousness. Within her consciousness she wished she could live life over again and have the carnal senses gratified. This thought was so prevalent in her consciousness she was always talking about boys. She wanted young boys around her. She wanted to adopt young boys. Young boys from sixteen to twenty were her prevailing thought, but she did not know why. They were of the opposite sex. That was the reason, and the opposite sex was within her consciousness.

She had no use for girls. She did not want them around her. They did not appeal to her. She wanted to preach. She felt that she had her magnetic and sex forces, but she did not. This was a delusion. Frequently "obsession" takes this turn



of thought. Maiden ladies who have practiced self abuse always want to work in the churches. There is an innate guilt within their consciousness and they want to flee to some source to hide the thought of guilt. They are very emotional. Their thoughts are of the senses. They make great workers in revivals, where the senses and the emotion is the controlling thought. But the pure minded maiden lady, who is a virgin indeed, and has preserved her virginity in thought, is not thus "possessed." She is sweet of face, and pure of character. The maiden lady who has lived a spiritual life. indeed, and is a virgin in thought, is the purest of all characters, and the sweetest in thought and heart. She is not "possessed." She has mastered the senses and overcome them in consciousness. She is not emotional; she is not of the senses in thought; she does not make a good worker at revivals, where the senses and emotions is the religion.

Her religion is Christianity. It is not of the senses. With her, religion is a matter of spiritual ideas and spiritual thoughts, and not emotion of the senses.

This "obsession" of the senses is death. The Author knew of a case where a man became "obsessed" with a woman. She infatuated him. They indulged so much in one day and night that his nervous system gave way within twenty-four hours. He said he felt a quivering throughout his body. He went to a professional masseur, who was a personal friend of the Author, and told his story. The masseur did all he could to restore his nerves and circulation. He died. His nerve centers had given away as the result of the shock. He had killed himself within twenty-four hours. This woman "obsessed"

him so that she destroyed him in twenty-four hours.

The Author recalls another case where a man became very much infatuated with a woman. He was "obsessed" by her. He was a successful business man and he equipped her with a handsome residence and lived with her and indulged carnally for some eight years. All the time his brain power was going and his mentality was fading away. Finally, one day while sitting in an automobile his heart ceased to beat for the want of nervous force. She had destroyed him and sent him to his grave in the prime of life.

The Author recalls two handsome young people who got married, they were young and handsome and had means to enjoy social life. They were "obsessed" by each other. They could not control themselves. Their senses were their masters. The husband's heart began to fail. The nerves that control the heart were giving away. Mutual friends, who were acquainted with the facts, advised them that they had better be cautious and that the husband's heart would not stand the indulgence of the senses. The wife replied that she wanted to live while she was living. They continued to gratify the senses; they could not come out from under the "obsession." In a few months the husband was dead with heart failure.

The Author recalls another case where a young man was "obsessed" with "self abuse." He was some three years older than the Author; they were boys together. This young man was much stronger than the Author; nature had given him a good and strong body. But he soon became all stooped over and contracted in the chest, shame of face and weak in the eyes. He would not look you in the eyes when

conversing with you. This was so noticeable that the older people in the community were all talking about it, but they were ignorant as to the cause. Later in life, when the Author became a lawyer and saw cases of this nature in the courts, where they were being investigated for insanity, he understood it all. This young man destroyed himself. His brain forces were gone.

The senses destroy the brain. The nerve force that runs the entire system is generated in the brain and distributed through the human system by way of the spinal cord and the generative organs. Sex indulgence shocks the brain, destroys the nerve centers and weakens the nerve force. It produces softening of the brain, insanity and premature old age. Parents should watch the youth in youthful years. That is when men and women are made or destroyed. A girl or boy that becomes "obsessed" while developing into womanhood or manhood, and practices "self abuse" or indulges sexually, cannot make a strong man or woman mentally nor a normal man or woman physically.

The "obsession" of the senses knows no compromise. It is hatred and death. The Author recalls a case where a woman became infatuated with a minister. They indulged in immoral practices; she became "obsessed" by him. Their relations were immoral, and through these immoral relations her soul lost all control. The minister became engaged and was going to get married. On the Sunday before he was to get married on Tuesday, while he was in his pulpit preaching, she went to the church with a razor in her pocket, walked down the aisle of the church to the pulpit, and lunged at him with a razor. As she came into one side of the pul-



pit with the razor, he came out the other. She had chosen this means of destroying him. If she could not have him, she would rather kill him than see another woman have him. That is the law of the "obsession" of the serpent.

An English queen had Sir Walter Raleigh put to death for the same reason, if history can be believed. In ancient times this was a practice in the courts of the Orient. In the palaces of the kings and queens many met their death as the result of "obsession." The king would secure a woman that he was "obsessed" with, use her to gratify his lust, and then have her killed. Queens would secure men that "obsessed" them and use them to gratify their passion and then have them killed. This was the law of "obsession" and the serpent. It is death and destruction.

All revolutions are caused by the same law. Upheavals in society are produced by the same law. All France was mesmerized with sex thought and hatred during the French Revolution.

Jesus lived above this law in thought and consciousness and cast the thought out of the consciousness of others who were "obsessed" by sex mesmerism and restored them to their normal thinking faculties. Jesus' resurrection was within his own thought and consciousness. His real resurrection took place within his own consciousness and thought before he went into the grave. He said, "I have power to lay my life down and to take it up again." He had overcome the "Prince of this world," which is lust and sex mesmerism in thought and consciousness, hence he had power to lay his life down and to take it up again.

The fact that he had been resurrected within

his own consciousness and thought enabled him physically to come out of the grave. As we overcome the senses in thought, we are being resurrected, and when we shall have overcome the last thought of the senses, in thought and consciousness, we will be resurrected with him, for we shall have overcome death. The Psalmist expressed it when he said: "Judge me, O Lord, for I have walked in mine integrity; I have trusted also in the Lord; therefore I shall not slide. Examine me, O Lord, and prove me; try my reins and my heart. For thy loving kindness is before mine eyes, and I have walked in thy truth. I have not sat with vain persons, neither will I go in with dissemblers. I have hated the congregation of evil doers, and will not sit with the wicked. I will wash mine hands in innocency; so will I compass thine altar, O Lord." Psalm 26:1-6.

The true altar of God is that holy state of mind wherein the soul has overcome the carnal in consciousness and can commune with God through the spiritual senses of the soul. We are erecting an altar to God every moment, as we overcome the carnal in thought, and we are being resurrected every moment as we overcome lust in consciousness. When the last thought of the senses shall have been overcome in consciousness we shall have erected the eternal altar to God, and have partaken of the general Judgment and the Eternal Resurrection.

"The congregation of evil doers" is the congregation of the carnal senses. "Evil" is within the lust senses. The "wicked" David says he will not sit with, are the carnal senses in thought. When we shall have overcome the "congregation of evil

doers," that is, the congregation of the carnal senses, we shall sit in the congregation of the holy—that is, we shall be so pure in thought we shall know God as our spiritual father.

The music of the "congregation of evil doers" is confusion. It is not the music of the congregation of the holy. The music of the congregation of the holy is spiritual notes, and it is harmony. The notes of music of the "congregation of the evil doers" is discord. What is passing as current christianity is of the senses and of the "congregation of evil doers," and it is discord. Take sex out of their religion and their systems of worship, and like Babylon of old, "harpers" will soon be heard "no more" within their temples and churches.

In the very nature of things there cannot be anything spiritual connected with the marriage relation and carnal propogation. The orthodox Jew did not make marriage a sacrament of his religion. He had no priestly ceremony at a marriage. He knew it was carnal. The young people who were the contracting parties simply announced that they had agreed to become husband and wife, in the presence of their relatives and friends. It was a domestic occasion and not a religious occasion with the orthodox Jew. The orthodox Jew knew that all that was connected with the marriage relation was carnal. Orthodoxy means "Righteousness" and not carnality. The orthodox Jew was supposed to be "righteous" and therefore looked upon marriage as a matter of carnality.

Until this day, if you go to the orthodox Jew synagogue, on the day of atonement, you will see all the married men dressed in robes, in which they are supposed to be buried. These robes are "sack



cloth" and are not worn by the single men. They are supposed to cover up the "nakedness" after "shame." They are symbolic of Adam and Eve having been turned out of the Garden of Eden on account of lust and they were ashamed. They attempted to cover up their "shame." The robes of cloth the orthodox married Jew wears, on the day of atonement, are supposed to hide his "nakedness." They are emblematic, too, of repenting in "sack cloth and ashes," for the lust and sin of the married state. The unmarried orthodox Jew does not wear these robes and "sack cloths" on the day of atonement. It is presumed that he has never been through carnality.

Marriage only came into the church as a sacrament of the church through paganism. All the pagan religions made marriage holy and sacred, because they were sex worshippers. They were bowed down to the sensual in thought, and lust was their religion. And hence, marriage was a sacrament of their religion. Go to the Catholic church today and you will see the married women fifty and sixty years of age, who are going down the decline of life and who know that the sunset of life will soon go down with them, counting the "Stations of the cross" and praying at each "Station of the cross." They have been through carnality, and they want their souls purged from sin. When young women, they were led to the altar in that church or some other church by men, and the priest or priests pronounced the marriage state holy; then they went through carnality. Now in old age they are praying to have their souls purged from the carnal which was pronounced holy at the altar, when they were young and took husbands.

There can be nothing holy in the carnal, and no man made system of law can make the carnal holy. The clergy in every possible way have tried to make lust holy, by making marriage an institution of the church. But they cannot make the carnal spiritual. Our Lord said, "The children of this world marry and are given in marriage. But they which shall be accounted worthy to obtain that world and the resurrection from the dead, neither marry nor are given in marriage." Luke 20:35.

If this is true, the converse is true. If those who have been resurrected from the lust of the flesh and have no desire for the opposite sex carnally and the marriage state, obtain life eternal, "And are the children of that world," those who have not overcome the lust of the flesh and been resurrected from death still have within their consciousness the desire to "marry and be given in marriage." In other words, those who have not overcome that which makes them marry in this world, are spiritually dead over there. They have lust in consciousness and are spiritually dead.

Man admits and the woman admits publicly, when they get married, that in thought and consciousness they are bowing down to the god of lust. St. Paul meant what he said, when he said, "If you cannot contain, it is better to marry than to burn." He agreed with St. John that those "Who have been born of God cannot sin, for their seed remaineth within them." But St. Paul says, "If you cannot contain," that is, if you are not spiritual enough to retain your sex seed, that you had better marry than to lose it through mental "self abuse," and mental pollution and prostitution. St. Paul says that he wished all men were as he was, that is,

“Never touched a woman.” He was like St. John; he had been born again, and could “contain” his seed. Again the Apostle Paul said, “Marriage is honorable” and the bed “undefiled.” He meant what he said. He was writing to those who had become Christians, since entering into the marriage state, and he meant that they should continue to live together, for this state was “honorable,” if the bed was “undefiled,” that is, if they abstained from sexual indulgence.

The Apostle Paul meant to say, and did say as plain as he could write it, if a man and woman were husband and wife and they became Christians, that they should live life out together, as companions, and brothers and sisters, and abstain from the sex indulgence. Again he said, “Husbands, love thy wives, and wives, love thy husbands.” He meant just what he said. The Greek word here translated “Love” is an entirely different word from the Greek word translated “Lust.” It is lust that makes them marry. It is lust that makes them propagate. Love is of the soul. It is spiritual. The Apostle meant if a man and woman are married and become Christians, that they should cease to “lust” for each other and “love” each other. Their relations then become spiritual and not carnal. They abstain from sexual indulgence.

Judas Ischariot kissed the Master with the kiss of betrayal. This kiss was of the senses. It was the carnal kiss. It is the kiss that the bride gives the groom and the groom gives the bride. It is from the sex brain. It was of the serpent. It was the symbol of the carnal senses betraying the soul. That is what the kiss of Judas Ischariot was symbolic of when he kissed the Savior and betrayed him. It



was the language of the serpent that betrayed the soul of Eve, hence St. Paul wrote to the Christians to salute each other with a "Holy kiss." That is. the kiss of the soul, and not with the kiss of the carnal senses of the lips, which is from the sex brain. The Christians kissed each other not in the mouth, but on the face.

The Apostles went to sleep in Gethsemane. This was symbolic of the carnal senses of the sex brain going to sleep. The soul goes to sleep in lust of the carnal senses. All that is of the carnal senses and the sex brain betrays the soul. And this lie is within all of us. The children of Isreal going into Egypt was symbolic of the soul going into the carnal senses in thought. Egypt was symbolic of sensuality and spiritual darkness. We are all in Egypt spiritually, and the race has been in Egypt in all ages, spiritually.

As we go out of the carnal senses in thought we go out of Egypt into the land of Canaan, which is symbolic of the land of spiritual understanding. As we become non-carnal in thought, the Red Sea rolls back from our spiritual understanding, and we pass over on dry land, spiritually, from the land of Egypt and carnality, into the land of spirituality.

The city of Jericho falling is symbolic of the carnal senses falling within our thoughts. The city of Jericho is within all of us, and as we become spiritual and non-sensual in thought, the walls of this carnal city fall within our spiritual understanding, and we march on toward the land of Canaan, flowing with spiritual "milk and honey." The Jews going into Babylon is symbolic of the soul going into the captivity of the carnal senses. The city of Babylon is within us all. As we become non-

carnal in thought we leave this city of captivity of the lust senses and return to Jerusalem, the city of soul vision.

The Philistines were the "uncircumcised Philistines." The Philistines were symbolic of the carnal senses. We all have the Philistines within us. The Philistines were symbolic of the thought of the sex brain. They became diseased with "Emrods" in their "secret parts," when they took charge of the Ark of God and their gods fell. When they took the Ark of God out of Shiloh, they became diseased in their "private parts," and their national god, "Dagon," fell. Shiloh is the Christ mind and Dagon is the mind of the sex brain. The race is diseased in its "private parts" by Dagon—lust.

The Philistines are with us today, and have been with the race in all ages, and it is diseased in its "private parts," from syphilis and gonorrhea, and with all manner and forms of disease. The children of Isreal were told to drive out the Philistines, the Canaanites, the Amorites, etc. They were told to drive out all the heathen nations, with their heathen gods, from the land of Canaan. These heathen gods were the carnal senses of the sex brain. They are within all the race and must be driven out of thought and consciousness for the soul to come into the land of Canaan, flowing with "milk and honey" and commune with God spiritually. As the race becomes spiritual and overcomes lust, it will be delivered of the "Emrods" within the "private parts" of the race and saved from disease. The diseases of the "private parts" are the results of sin and lust. Purity will save the race from the "Emrods" within the "secret parts" of the Philistines.

Babylon means "The gate of the gods and confusion." The orgasm of the sex act is the gate and the way to the essence of the thought and consciousness of the god of lust, and this is "confusion." The belief in the pleasure of the senses and of this act is the lie of the serpent, and the belief in this lie has caused all the trouble, sorrow, suffering, disease and insanity of the race. Without the belief in the pleasure of the senses and the sex act, there would be no disease and insanity. Remove the lie that there is pleasure in the senses and in the orgasm of the sex act from the consciousness of the minds and souls of the race and you will stop all strife, discord, confusion, disease, insanity and death. That is what the Holy Spirit does when He comes into the consciousness of the soul. The Holy Spirit which is the Comforter when he comes into the consciousness of the soul, quickens the soul to life and removes the lie from the soul that there is pleasure in the carnal senses and the orgasm of the sex act. Then the soul becomes alive. It is quickened from the death of the lust of the flesh. It is sanctified. The party then becomes a Christian.

Jesus said, "The Father had sanctified the Son." That is, the Father had made the Son holy, and He had overcome the lie of the serpent that there is pleasure within the carnal senses and the orgasm of the sex act. And the Son being in this holy state of thought imparted the thoughts of his mind to the consciousness of others, and removed from their thoughts and state of consciousness the belief of pleasure in the carnal senses, and the orgasm of the sex act, and "Healed them."

All the sorrow of the race, revolves around the lie that there is pleasure within the carnal senses



and the orgasm of the sex act. All other lust of the flesh revolves around the lust of the sex act. All lust of the flesh comes out of the lust of the sex act. The desire for liquor and drugs comes from lust. The common prostitute soon becomes a drunkard and a drug fiend. The immoral man desires liquor and drugs as a rule. Falsehood comes out of the lust of the flesh. Every lawyer knows, as a rule, that he cannot believe the testimony of a fallen woman, nor of a man who practices "self abuse." They are depraved in thought and will lie. Every lawyer knows that the fallen woman is dishonest, and that a man who is infatuated with a woman, will steal that he may get what he needs to gratify her wants.

The mind of the sex brain is dishonest. and untruthful. All honesty and character is within the mind of the soul. All truth is spiritual. All falsehood is of the senses and the mind of the sex brain. The law of thought of the sex brain is destruction. The old man who marries a young woman digs his own grave. He does not live long. He soon becomes sunken in the back of the neck, where the vital forces are located, and dies. The life of the fallen woman is of short duration. The depravity of thought as well as a diseased body, soon destroys her. The remorse within the consciousness of her soul poisons the body as well as the mind, and she soon dies both physically and spiritually. This is the law of the serpent.

The young man who begins sex indulgence early in life ages prematurely. The author has known boys, early after puberty, to begin sex indulgence. At twenty or twenty-five years of age they were physical and mental wrecks. The man

should never indulge sexually until he is thirty years of age, and then only for propogation. The male does not mature sexually until thirty. While he is developing mentally and physically into maturity, he should totally abstain from all carnal indulgence. To do this, he should keep his mind and soul pure in thought. He should live above the carnal in thought. That is what our Master did.

The female does not mature sexually until she is twenty-five. This is the normal age for a woman to marry and become a mother. If she marries or becomes a mother in young girlhood, while she is maturing, she will be an old woman at maturity. This is the law of the serpent. But to abstain until she is twenty-five years of age she should live a pure life in thought and keep her consciousness free from sex thoughts. If she indulges in carnal thoughts and lust desires she is liable to become a physical and nervous wreck. By indulging in carnal and lustful thoughts she generates the sex fluids in a larger degree than her body needs and can consume; and as a result she poisons her whole system—and mind, too. Mental “Self Abuse” is the worst kind of “self abuse;” it is destructive in its very nature. Sex maturity varies with climate. But we are now speaking of the average age of the race.

Purity is virginity. A physical virgin may be a harlot. Virginity does not consist in physical purity, but in mental and spiritual purity. Our Lord was spiritually a virgin and so are all Christians and the holy and sanctified. When John the Baptist sent his disciples to Jesus, Jesus said unto them “Go and shew John again those things which ye do hear and see, the blind receive their sight,

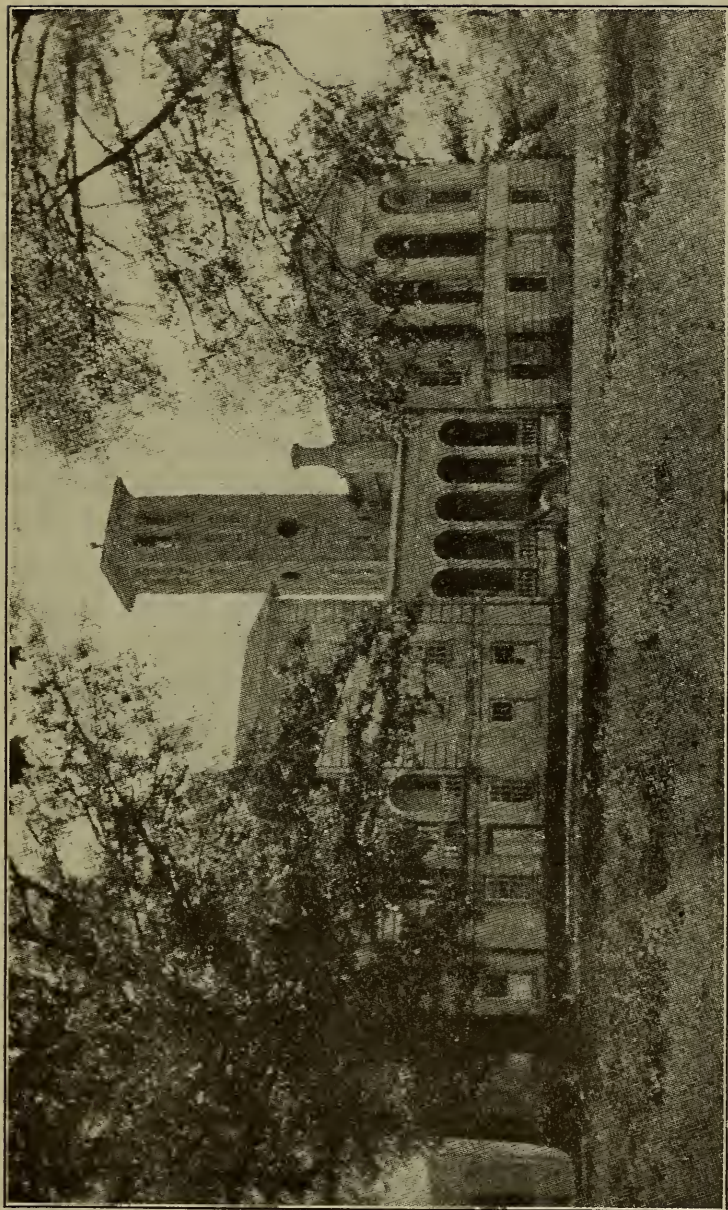
and the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed, and the deaf hear, the dead are raised up, and the poor have the gospel preached to them. And blessed is he whosoever shall not be offended in Me." Matt. 11:4-6.

Here is the law of purity. The people were lepers because of the impurity of the age. Leprosy is a high form of syphilis. The leper is "unclean." His disease is the result of the serpent's sting. The "lame" are afflicted from the same thought. "Deafness" comes from the sin of the serpent. And death itself results from the serpent. Sex lust is the father of them all. Jesus cured them all and raised the dead. He cast out of their consciousness the belief in the pleasure of the carnal senses and the orgasm of the sex act, and "healed them" and "raised the dead," and he said, "Blessed is he who shall not be offended in me." The carnal minded are offended by the law of purity. The impure are "ashamed." They have guilt within the consciousness of their souls.

If the race would overcome sin and sex lust, in consciousness and thought, there would be no more shame. The people of Nazareth were impure when Jesus went down there to preach to them. They had Sodom and Gomorrah in their consciousness, and hence his purity of thought aroused their indignation and "they led Him to the top of the hill of their town to kick Him down head foremost." Had the people down there been pure and non-sensual, they would have received his message in Nazareth. Only the pure will receive the Gospel. The Gospel means the new ideas of the soul. The Gospel is the overcoming of carnality, and the thoughts and desires of the orgasm of the



sex act, and coming into the new ideas of the spirit and of soul sense. Hence, the Gospel will always arouse the indignation of the pagan.



ORIGINAL MAIN BUILDING, FURMAN UNIVERSITY, GREENVILLE, S. C., WHERE  
SIDNEY C. TAPP GRADUATED IN 1892

## CHAPTER XIV.

The pagan is a sex worshipper. He is living for and worships the gods of the carnal senses, and the belief in pleasure of the orgasm of the sex act. The orgasm of the sex act is his god. This thought is the god of all the pagan world and all that is human within man. The overcoming of this thought within the consciousness of the soul is the Gospel, and life eternal.

Purity arouses the resentment of the impure. A pure minded minister of today who would preach the Gospel would meet with indignation and wrath at the hands of the pagan world. A minister whose message is received by a pagan world is preaching the carnal senses. He is preaching the senses to the carnal senses of his hearers. The author knows of a good lady who had read "The Truth About the Bible," by the author. After having read it, she had a conception of what constituted Christianity. There was a clergyman preaching near her and she went to hear him; after the services were over she met him. She had in mind the ideas contained in the author's "Truth About the Bible," so she said to the clergyman when she met him, "Is there a Mrs?" meaning, of course, did the clergyman have a wife. The clergyman did not know what she had in mind, and was blind to her viewpoint of the Bible. He smiled, with a gracious smile, and said, "Yes, and eight little ones." The lady then could readily understand the nature of the discourse she had just listened to, which the clergyman had



just preached and which he termed the "Gospel."

The author recalls another superb illustration of the preaching of the senses to the senses. He has a friend who has read and studied the author's "Truth About the Bible." This man is a man of piety and Christian spirit, and he related personally to the author this state of facts. That he knew of a young, virile and well developed minister, who was supposed to be a minister of the Gospel. The whole town was wild about him, especially the ladies. The ladies who were of young womanhood and up to middle age, would pack the church to hear him preach. The author's friend, who knew him, said after the services were over the minister would come down and shake hands with the audience; that frequently he would receive many notes from the hands of the ladies for private engagements; that on one occasion when the minister had finished shaking hands with the audience after preaching, he had fifteen notes in his pocket which had been placed in his hand by the ladies, while he was shaking hands with the audience, requesting private engagements, and three of them were from a mother and her two daughters. Of course, the mother did not know that either one of the daughters had placed a note in his hand, and neither one of the daughters knew that the other sister or the mother had placed a note in his hand.

This occurrence was related to the author by a reputable man whom the author believes to be a Christian gentleman; and we here relate it to show the law of the carnal senses and to demonstrate the law of sex magnetism. The minister referred to, by his sex forces, had stirred up the sex forces of the opposite sex of his audience. This is what

is daily being preached as the "Gospel." This is sex worship and paganism; and it has prevailed in all ages. It is not Christianity. The early Christians had none of the emotions of the senses in their worship. They met, and some elder would read an extract from one of the Gospels or an epistle from one of the apostles, or some other portion of the Scriptures, and then they went into silence. They silenced the senses. They made "All the earth be still" in the house of God.

There they silenced the carnal mind and the thoughts of the sex brain, and went into spiritual sense, in thought; and communed with God as spirit. There they "chanted the psalms" as the spiritual music of the soul. They had no "harrangues" of the senses from some well sexed and virile man to stir their sex forces. Their senses were not stirred up by the senses of the opposite sex. The "Harrangues" of the carnal senses were of later day developing. They came into the Christian church, as paganism took charge of christianity, and adulterated Christian thought with carnality. The preaching of the mind of the sex brain is of paganism.

To illustrate the truth of this, when a minister of modern times becomes old, and his sex forces begin to fail him, he is forced to resign. He cannot hold his audience. His preaching was of the carnal senses and the sex brain, and when they fail, he fails. If his preaching were of the soul, in old age and when he should be spiritual, he could do his best work. The Apostle John did not write his Gospel until he was an old man. He had lived a pure life, and in old age the veil of the sex

senses had become thin, and his soul could penetrate into the spiritual world.

The saintly apostle had failed physically and his sex forces were fading away in thought and consciousness, hence, he could see with soul vision, and with the eye spiritual, and wrote to the churches the most spiritual message of all the apostles. He left to the saints of all ages the state of thought of his pure soul as a message divine. As the mind of Satan and the sex forces faded away in thought and became as nothing to him, he saw the Holy City with the eye divine. He did not "resign" his Apostleship because his sex forces had failed; but declared his son-ship with God.

The true Christian minister does not need his sex forces to discern with an eye divine the spiritual truths of the Gospel and to deliver them (in spiritual communion) to souls that are hungering for the spiritual food of life. But the pagan minister of the carnal senses needs his sex forces and his sex brain. His message is one from the carnal senses and sex brain, and without his sex forces and sex brain, he is a failure. All things human are built on the sex brain. Human governments, industry, commerce and all human ambition are built on the sex brain.

Sex worship permeates our systems of religion today as it did in the days of Babylon. The choirs that sing in our churches are young and virile; the old are not there. They have not the sex forces to stir up the carnal senses of the audience. The author has heard of an occurrence which illustrates the truth of this law. A clergyman who thought he was preaching the Gospel, but who, as a matter of fact was preaching the carnal senses of his sex



brain, was conducting a "revival." The weather was cold. He was not having much of a success. It seemed that the "revival" was going to be a failure. The clergyman came ahead of the audience one day and said to the janitor: "Build a good fire; this building has been too cold; the people's feet have been cold; this meeting has been a failure; build up a fire here and just heat up this building; whoever heard tell of people getting religion with cold feet?" The clergyman, ignorantly was expressing the law of sex psychology. Every man who has studied the law of sex psychology knows if you put a well sexed, virile man by the side of a virile woman and the atmosphere is warm, that a sex current is immediately formed between them. The man is the positive force, and the woman is the negative force of the current.

The stronger they are, and the more virile they are, and the warmer the atmosphere is in the room, the stronger and more forceful the sex current will be. In a short time their sex senses have formed the unit of carnal thought. Their sex brains become polarized. This accounts for so much copulation between sexes during "Revivals" and increase of childbirth thereafter.

In a cold room, the current will not form so well. This is the law. Fill a house about half and half with males and females and heat it, and the current immediately forms and the emotions of the senses become strong. They are soon ready to "shout." The more animal they are, and the less intelligent they are, the harder they will "shout," and the stronger will be the current of the carnal senses. This is sex worship.

This was the preaching of Simon, the magician.

“But there was a certain man called Simon, which before time in the same city used sorcery and bewitched the people of Samaria, giving out that himself was some great one; to whom they all gave heed, from the least to the greatest saying, this man is the great power of God. And to him they had regard because that of long time he had bewitched them with sorceries. But when they believed Phillip preaching the things concerning the kingdom of God and the name of Jesus Christ, they were baptized, both men and women. Then Simon, himself, believed also; and when he was baptized he continued with Phillip, and wondered beholding the miracles and signs which were done. Now, when the Apostles, which were at Jerusalem heard that Samaria had received the word of God they sent unto them Peter and John, who when they were come down, prayed for them that they might receive the Holy Spirit. For as yet He was fallen upon none of them; only they were baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus!

Then laid they their hands on them, and they received the Holy Ghost. And when Simon saw that through laying on of the Apostles' hands, the Holy Ghost was given, he offered them money, saying: Give me also this power, that on whomsoever I lay hands he may receive the Holy Ghost. But Peter said unto him, Thy money perish with thee because thou hast thought that the gift of God may be purchased with money, Thou hast neither part nor lot in this matter for thy heart is not right in the sight of God. Repent therefore, of this, thy wickedness, and pray God if perhaps the thought of thine heart may be forgiven thee.” Acts 8:9-22.

Simon, the magician, was preaching his carnal

senses down at Samaria. This is sorcery. And we have Simon, the magician with us today. He has been with the race in all ages; he is within the sex brain. He was at Ephesus when Paul went there to preach, and they cried out: "Great is Dianna, the Ephesians, and great is Dianna, the Ephesians today, and great had been Dianna the Ephesians in all ages." It is the magnetism of the sex brain. The Holy Ghost takes this thought out of the consciousness of the soul, and cleanses the soul from every desire and power of carnal magnetism.

Peter said to Simon, the magician, "Repent therefore of this thy wickedness and pray God if perhaps the thought of thine heart may be forgiven thee. For I perceive that thou art in the gall of bitterness and in the bond of iniquity. Then answered Simon, and said, Pray ye to the Lord for me that none of these things which ye have spoken come upon me." Acts 8:22-24. Simon, the magician, thought he could buy the Holy Ghost. The depravity of the human heart and the sex brain, thinks that the spiritual can be purchased with money. Carnality believes that money represents all that is good, and that all that is good is within the senses; therefore, money will buy that which is good. The carnal senses and sex brain confound the evil of the senses with the good of the spiritual. Money will not buy the spiritual, but the Holy Ghost will remove carnality from the soul and then the soul can conceive spiritually and discern spiritual ideas.

The Author, as a lawyer, observed that all crime had its origin within the sex. He observed that the contentions of the human mind were located within the sex mind. He likewise observed that deception and untruthfulness had their origin



in the sex. In the daily examination of witnesses upon the witness stand his experience soon taught him that the harlot woman could not be believed on oath; neither could the man who practiced self abuse, nor the man who was impure and immoral in his personal life. He oftentimes endeavored to get the truth out of men and women that he believed and was satisfied practiced self abuse. But he was never able to get one of these witnesses to look him in the face when he examined them on the witness stand. They had shame written within their expression and consciousness. And when being examined would drop their eyes and look downward. Their action was in keeping with their testimony. Their testimony was untruthful as a rule, and their actions were those of shame and disgrace.

He also observed that the contentions between husbands and wives had their origin within the sex. He saw in the courts the imbeciles being examined for lunacy as the result of sex. He noticed that insanity had its origin within the sex. This led him to study the Bible from this viewpoint, and as he read the Bible from this viewpoint he could see all nature written within the Bible. He could see the causes of national upheavals and political revolutions as he studied the Bible from this viewpoint. He saw, and it was clear to him, that political revolution, war and strife of nations have their origin within the mesmerism of the senses. The strife between individuals has the same origin.

This truth became clear to the Author as he studied the Bible from this viewpoint. This caused him to investigate nature and the Bible side by

side, and he saw that the thought of the Bible and the thought of nature ran in parallel lines. That the mind of the senses and the carnal mind of the Bible are one and the same. This caused him to investigate crime, insanity and disease from the viewpoint of sex, and he saw that they had their origin within the sex; and he studied the Bible from this viewpoint, and the more he studied the Bible from this viewpoint, the clearer it became to his mind that the sex mind was the "evil" that was in Eden that Adam and Eve came into the consciousness of when they fell, and that the sex mind is the "evil" of the Bible.

After he came into the consciousness of this truth, he saw the truth of the Bible written in men and women's faces daily, and within their actions and motives. He could see the cause of all insanity, crime and disease. and all the ills of the race. He thought of the millions who were flocking to the churches throughout the world every Sunday and going away as ignorant as they went, as to the truth of the Bible and the cause of the insanity, disease, crime and sufferings of the race. He saw that the Clergy were not touching the question of the truth of the Bible, and that the people were in ignorance and darkness as to the truth of the Bible, in his mind's eye he could see all the race like sheep gone astray and without a shepherd. This touched his heart deeply. Daily as he went about his usual vocation, he could see the sick, the blind, the deaf, the lame, the halt, the insane and the criminal, and he knew the cause of their ills.

He could see the cause of the suffering and sorrow of the race daily written in the faces of

men and women. He knew that they were not being taught the truth of the Bible. He knew that their sufferings and sorrows were due to ignorance of the Truth of the Bible. He knew that they were being taught Sunday after Sunday, in the churches throughout the world, sex mesmerism for Christianity, and that the suffering and sorrows of the race had followed as the result.

The Author was conscious of the fact that the purity of Christianity as our Lord and his Apostles taught it, would relieve the suffering, sorrows, diseases and insanity of the race. That Christianity in its purity was the remedy for the ills of the race. Hence he determined to write the "Truth of the Bible" as he conceived it and give it to the race as the remedy of the suffering and sorrows of the race. When he began to write, he only expected to write one book, and that was his first edition of "The Truth About the Bible," but from day to day and from week to week, and month to month, and year to year, the truth of the Bible unfolded clearer and clearer into his consciousness and understanding; hence, to date, he has revised the "Truth About the Bible" three times, written the "Sexology of the Bible," and revised it once, and written "Why Jesus Was a Man and Not a Woman." and is now writing this book, "The Duality of the Bible."

Each of these books has expressed the more advanced views of the truth as it unfolded into the Author's consciousness. Soon after the Author wrote the first edition of "The Truth About the Bible" he was sitting in a law office with a brother lawyer in one of the large cities of this country and the courthouse was just a few hundred feet



from the building in which this law office was located. The brother lawyer said to him, "The evidence that this book of yours, 'The Truth About the Bible,' is the truth, is demonstrated over there daily, pointing toward the courthouse. Go over there at any day to the court where they examine the insane and you can see the truth of this book. There are the young boys and girls just coming into manhood and womanhood being investigated for feeble mindedness and insanity and sent to the home of the feeble minded and to the insane asylum. There are men in middle life being investigated for insanity, for the cause shown in this book. There are old men and women, nearing the grave, whose minds are gone as the result of the cause that you show in this book. It never occurred to me that the Bible had anything to do with this question until I saw this book, but if that Bible was taught and understood by the race as interpreted in this book, we would soon need no courts to investigate the insane, and no homes for the feeble minded and no asylums for the insane. The idea taught in this book as the truth of the Bible would remedy this evil. It would relieve poor humanity from this suffering and sorrow."

As I sat there and talked to this man, who was a man of fine intelligence and good purposes, and saw how the idea of the book impressed him, I determined to continue to pursue the work, and to give my best efforts to relieve the sufferings of humanity from the diseases, crime and insanity which afflict the race, by giving the race the truth of the Bible as I conceived that Jesus preached it, Moses, and the prophets and the apostles wrote it; hence, I continued with my work up to date.

Whether I shall continue to write more, I do not know.

My physical body is frail and my nervous system is weak. I have held mind and body together these many years by the law, mind over matter. Sometimes I feel like letting go mentally that the corporeal man may return to dust, and that the spiritual man which is the ego, or the real man, may enter beyond the veil and see with perfect vision of the spiritual eye. But if I never write anything more I relate this state of facts that the reader may know why I wrote these books on the Bible and what my purpose was in writing them.

I want those who shall read them as the generations come and go, to know that my purpose was good. That it was a heart bleeding with sorrow for suffering humanity that caused these books to be written. I saw sin everywhere and its results written on the faces of men and women. It touched me deeply. I knew that they did not know that the Bible contained the remedy for their woes. I knew that they had not been taught the truth as our Lord preached it. I knew that they had been taught sex mesmerism for Christianity. That they had been taught darkness for light, and death for life, and hence, all the race was in outer darkness, living within the carnal senses in thought and consciousness.

That all the race was "obsessed," and that this obsession was the result of the teachings that they had been taught sex mesmerism for Christianity. And I purposed to write these books as the means of teaching the race the truth and as the means of breaking the thought of sex mes-

merism which had all the race "obsessed." My purpose was to give them the spiritual truth as the Christ taught it, so as to "dispossess" the race, that the race might come out from under the cloud of the senses in thought into the noonday light of truth in thought and consciousness. My purpose has been to give them the truth as the Christ taught it, that the day dawn of the morning of the resurrection might shine forth in their consciousness and that the night of sex mesmerism might fade away from their thought and consciousness.

With the coming of the day dawn of the morning of the resurrection within the consciousness of the race, the night of sex mesmerism fades away, and as the night of sex mesmerism goes out of the consciousness of the race, disease, insanity and crime will be no more. My purpose has been good. I hope those who read this and my other books on the Bible, as generations come and go, will judge me according to my purpose.



## CHAPTER XV.

Simon, the magician, when Peter reprimanded him, realized he was in the "bonds of iniquity," and was preaching the carnal senses and animal magnetism for spirituality and "repentance." Those who are preaching carnality for spirituality must surrender up the magnetic forces of the carnal senses and die to them spiritually, if they would understand the Gospel and the Christ mind and become the ministers of the Gospel. The Gospel begins where animal magnetism and carnality ends.

Where carnality and the magnetism of the carnal senses end in thought, the Gospel and the spiritual ideas of the soul begin in thought. Christianity is the overcoming of the forces of the sex magnetism, in thought and consciousness. Simon, the magician, was in Babylon. He was in Sodom and Gomorrah. He was in Ninevah, and he was in Egypt. He has been in all ages. The forces of the sex brain has been the religion of the race since Cain murdered Abel, and will be until carnality is overcome.

Simon, the magician, is in the literature and art of the race. He is in the music of the race. The thought of the sex brain has controlled the art, music and literature of the race. The serpent's mind is in the architecture of the race. It was in evidence in the architecture of the pagan temples. The steeples on the pagan temples represented the generative organs of the male, and the doors of the pagan temples were patented after the gen-

erative organs of the female. The thought of the serpent's mind in the consciousness of the race, has come down through the ages. It is in evidence through the steeples on our churches today. It is within the consciousness of the race.

Simon, the magician, is everywhere present in the thought and consciousness of the race. Within a few blocks of where I write is the United States Postoffice. I go there daily to get my mail, and I see Simon, the magician, in evidence daily before me. There the women are continually coming in streams to get their mail from men. There they open their letters and read the thoughts of Simon, the magician, from the opposite sex. The thought of the carnal senses is within the consciousness of their souls and they are "bowing down" to the lust senses of their gods.

What takes place there daily is taking place throughout the world daily. It is the serpent in the thought of the race. The automobile invention is carnality in thought. It is a sex matter. Remove the sex thought and it would reduce the demand for automobiles. Men have accumulated vast fortunes in my lifetime out of the sex thought through this invention. Sex is in the music of your churches. It is in every artery of commerce. It is in the poetry of the race.

Cain is within the strains of music that stir armies on for battle and to death. The thought of the carnal senses lead bride and groom to the pagan altar, then cause them to murder each other. The marriage ceremony, which is called Christian, but which, in fact, is pagan, is Satanic in thought. The man is required to say "That he leaves all other women and forsakes all others to cleave unto this

woman and to her alone," and the bride is required to take the same vow. This language translated into thought means this, that the woman appeals sexually to the man more than any other woman and sexually he is willing to give up all other women for her, and that the man appeals sexually to the woman more than any other man, and that she is willing to give up all other men sexually for this man; and that they completely sexually polarize each other.

If this be true, then each will kill the other before he or she will surrender or give up the other sexually. This is the law of the serpent and the Satanic mind. The Author personally knows of a case where a young dentist was thus infatuated with a young woman and she would not marry him; another man was her choice. She polarized him sexually but he did not polarize her. So great was her polarization upon him and his infatuation for her, that he would rather kill her than see another man have her. Hence, one Sunday night, while sitting in the parlor with her, when she finally declined to surrender the other man and accept him, he pulled a revolver from his pocket and blew her brains out. This is only one case of many around us daily. It illustrates the law of the Satanic mind, which is in all nature and controls all mating and propagation by the sexes. The young should be taught this truth, and that there is nothing holy in thought or consciousness that can emanate out of the sex mind.

They should be taught the law of the serpent is selfishness and deception, hypocrisy and destruction and death; and that all mating of the sexes and propagation here in the flesh is of the



Satanic mind, and therefore, carnality is to be restrained as much as possible. They should be taught that all that is Holy is of soul and spirit; and that the more spiritual they are and the less carnal they are. the nearer they approach the Kingdom of God and the nearer they become Christians; and that when they become Christians in fact, they overcome carnality and come into the Kingdom of God and "contain" the sex seed, and are the children of God.

This is the truth. This is Christianity as our Lord taught it; and this is the Gospel as he preached it, and this is the Truth that will destroy the power of Simon, the Magician, and abolish the mind of the serpent and lust from the consciousness and thought of the race. This Gospel as Jesus preached it and Christianity as he taught it will eliminate disease, crime and insanity, and make Satan "loose his prisoners whom he has in captivity." This Christianity, as the Master taught it, will roll back the Red Sea and let the soul go out of the lust of carnality into the land of spiritual truth. It will release the soul from captivity in the carnal land of Egypt and let it go into the land of Canaan, which is the land of spiritual truth. It will release the soul from the captivity of Babylon and the belief in pleasure of the sex act, and let it return to Zion and tune the music of harps divine. It will lead the children of Israel which is the soul wandering in the wilderness, out into the land of spiritual light.

It will drive out all the senses of the Canaanites, Philistines and Amorites and the gods of the other heathens and will let the soul come into the spiritual understanding of God as spirit. It will

lift the veil of the sense of the sex brain from the eyes of the soul, and let the soul behold God as spirit, through soul sense and spiritual vision. Christianity, as the Christ taught it, is the soul overcoming every thought of carnality and desire of the carnal senses.

St. James says, "Blessed is the man that endureth temptation; for when he is tried he shall receive the crown of life which the Lord hath promised to them that love him." James 1:12. "Temptation," here is sex lust. It is the same temptation that deceived Eve. It is the serpent. It is the "temptation" that tempted our Lord for forty days and forty nights in the wilderness. We all have this serpent within us, it is the lust of the sex brain, but "blessed is the man that endureth temptation." The word translated "endureth" here in the original means "to overcome;" that is, blessed is the man that overcometh lust, for he shall receive the crown of life. Our Lord overcame it and was the "life."

"But every man is tempted when he is drawn away, of his own lust and enticed. Then when lust has conceived, it bringeth forth sin, and sin when it is finished bringeth forth death." James 1:14-15. Lust is Cain, it is the sex brain, and when it conceives, it bringeth forth sin. Conception is the conceiving of an idea. An idea, is a concept. Every carnal idea is a lustful concept, and has its origin within the sex brain. Every soul idea is a spiritual concept, and has its origin in the mind of the soul. Spiritual conception is life. Carnal conception is death. We all are conceived through carnal conception; that is, with the lust of the sex brain, and hence, must be born of the spirit to see

God; that is, we must overcome carnality in thought and consciousness and be re-conceived by the mind of the soul.

Carnal conception is death. Go ask the prostitute who has sin and death written on her face and she will tell you this is true. Go ask the man eaten up with syphilis and he will tell you the lust of the flesh is death. Go ask the man crippled and diseased with gonorrhea rheumatism as he limps and halts, and he will tell you "Such as a man soweth, he also reaps." Go ask the man blind and deaf from syphilific diseases of his parents, and he will tell you that the "Sins of the parents are visited upon the children unto the third and fourth generations."

Go ask the man or woman that was born blind from his or her mother's womb as the result of the gonorrheal or syphilific mother, who contracted the disease through the sins of her husband, and the offspring will tell you that "The wages of sin is death." Go ask the woman who is prostrate in the hospital with her private organs cut out as the result of sexual diseases and she will tell you that the "Way of the transgressor is hard." Finally ask the man who has served lust all his life, as he lies on his deathbed, and he will tell you "That sin, when it hath finished bringeth forth death." Sin is lust. Sin produced death and was the original cause of death, and death must be overcome; that is, the sex lust of the flesh, for the resurrection to take place within the consciousness of your soul and my soul, and for you and I to ascend out of the "Earth" of this carnal body, in thought and consciousness into the spiritual presence and "Paradise of God."



The Apostles had a hard time to convince the sensual age in which they preached that lust was sin and death. The race was deep in sensuality. They wrote against lust. They preached against it, but they had a hard time in arousing a race spiritually dead, from the night of sensuality and death.

Paul wrote against it and preached against it. He said, "To be carnal minded was death, but to be spiritual minded is life."

St. James wrote against it. He said, "When lust has conceived, it bringeth forth sin, and when sin is finished, it bringeth forth death." St. Peter wrote against it. He said, "Dearly beloved, I beseech you as strangers and pilgrims, abstain from fleshly lust, which wars against the soul." First Peter, 2:11. The saintly Apostle John, wrote against it. He said, "Every man that hath this hope in him purifieth himself, even as he is pure." First John 3:3.

St. Jude wrote against lust. He said, "But, beloved, remember ye the words which were spoken, before of the Apostles, of our Lord, Jesus Christ, how that they told you that there should be mockers in the last time, who should walk after their own ungodly lusts. These are they who separate themselves, sensual, having not the spirit. But ye, beloved, building up yourselves on your most holy faith, praying in the Holy Ghost, keep yourselves in the love of God, looking for the mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ unto eternal life." Jude 17-21.

Here the Apostle Jude defines lust as spiritual death, and the overcoming of lust, which is the quickening of the Holy Spirit, as eternal life. The "Anti-Christ" is within the sex brain. It is sex

lust. This is the "Anti-Christ" that the Apostles wrote and preached about. We all have the "Anti-Christ" within us. Every man or woman has the "Anti-Christ" within him or her at the age of puberty. The "Anti-Christ" is the sex senses of the generative organs, and the lust senses of the brain. "Anti-Christ" is every carnal and lust desire. It is the serpent's mind. The thought of the orgasm of the sex act within the consciousness of the soul is the essence of the "Anti-Christ." And all who overcome lust in thought and desire overcome the "Anti-Christ" and become Christ-like. They have the gospel. They have the spiritual ideas of the divine mind within the consciousness of their souls.

The "Anti-Christ" is destroyed within us all through the quickening power of the Holy Spirit. Lust, which is the serpent's mind, and the "Anti-Christ," murders the soul. It is death. The Holy Spirit quickens the soul to life. That is, destroys the carnal desires within the consciousness of the soul for the lust of the flesh, and this is the overcoming of death. The soul goes into Babylon in thought and consciousness when the orgasm of the sex act takes place. The soul of every man and woman has "The image of the beast" written within the consciousness of the soul when the orgasm of the sex act takes place. The soul then goes into hell and death. And this "image of the beast," which is written within the consciousness of the soul when the orgasm of the sex act takes place is death. It is the "Anti-Christ." "And they worshipped the beast, saying who is like unto the beast." Rev. 13:4. The

“Beast” is the orgasm of the sex act and the race is worshipping the beast.

This “image of the beast” must be removed from the consciousness of the soul for the soul to come back into the “image of God” and have life eternal. This “image of the beast” is removed from the consciousness of the soul though the quickening power of the Holy Spirit. When the soul is quickened and made alive from the death of the “image of the beast,” and the lust of the flesh is overcome, the soul then becomes a Christian. When the orgasm of the sex act takes place, the soul is in Babylon. This is the city of the devil and the city of death. It is the city of night and death in thought and consciousness and this, “the image of the beast,” is written in the consciousness of the soul, when the orgasm of the sex act takes place. It is removed by the quickening power of the Holy Spirit, then the soul leaves the city of Babylon and goes into the city of Zion, which is the city of soul sense and spiritual ideas in thought.

The city of Babylon is the city of carnality in thought. The soul can reside in this city and be spiritually dead by committing the sex act in thought. Through lust desires and carnal thoughts the soul can remain in Babylon and be spiritually dead. For the soul to reside in Zion it must come out of Babylon in thought. Every carnal thought and desire must be overcome in consciousness for the soul to go into Zion and to have a spiritual understanding of God. Jesus preached on this question. He said, “Adulterous generation, how can you escape the damnation of hell?” He made no exception to the rule. He said lust was death



and that lust must be overcome for the soul to have life.

He made lust and death synonymous terms. It was lust that produced death, and he preached the truth as the truth. Again he said, "Ye serpents, ye generations of vipers, how can ye escape the damnation of hell?" Luke 23:23. The Master put the truth as it is. He put death where it belonged. He stated the cause of death without equivocation. Hell is death, and death is hell. The death of the soul is a spiritual death, and this spiritual death is outer darkness. It is night to the soul. This state of thought is produced by the lust of the flesh. All carnality must be overcome for the soul to enter Zion. The "Anti-Christ" must be overcome for the Christ to enter the consciousness of the soul. The city of Babylon must be overcome for our souls to enter the city of Zion. This thought is contained in the eighteenth chapter of Revelation. Here in this chapter is the law of life and the law of death. In the eighteenth chapter of Revelation, Babylon is "fallen" to all the souls that have overcome lust.

The story of Samson is a story of sex. It is the story of the conflict between the sex mind and the soul mind. The narrative of Samson is the narrative of the sex mind and its cunningness and its conflict with the soul mind. Samson's hair was symbolic of his sex vigor. He had been a moral man and had not wasted his father's substance upon the harlot as did the prodigal son. The Philistines were the carnal senses in thought. They were symbolic of the sex mind. And the Philistine woman outwitted Samson and destroyed him. Her story to him was the intrigue and deception of the

sex mind of the female.

“And she said unto him, how canst thou say, I love thee, when thine heart is not with me?” Sixteenth chapter of Judges, 15th verse. Through her intrigue and deception she caused him to reveal to her the secrets of his heart and then she destroyed him. She had his hair taken from him and his eyes put out. She robbed him of the glory of his sex vigor and then put his eyes out. He was then destroyed and spiritually blind. The Samsons are all around us. Their sex vigor is gone. They are physical and mental wrecks, and they are spiritually blind. They have been destroyed by the harlots.

This law holds good as to the male. The young women are all around us who have been destroyed through the intrigue and “beast” within man. It is the Cain within both sexes, and this Cain is causing the sexes to destroy each other. Samson, after he was released from the intrigue of the woman, let his hair grow again, and although blind, he destroyed the Philistines as revenge for what he considered his wrongs. This is the law of the serpent. It is self destructive, and destroys all with which it comes in contact. The story of Samson, as recorded in the 15th, 16th, 17th chapters of Judges, is a true story of the law of the mind of the sex brain and its war with the soul.

“And after these things I saw another angel come down from heaven, having great power, and the earth was lightened with his glory. And he cried mightily with a strong voice, saying, Babylon the great is fallen, is fallen, and is become the habitation of devils, and the hold of every foul spirit, and a cage of every unclean and hateful

bird. For all nations have drunk of the wine of the wrath of her fornication, and the kings of the earth have committed fornication with her, and the merchants of the earth are waxed rich through the abundance of her delicacies.

“And I heard another voice from Heaven saying, Come out of her, my people, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues. For her sins have reached unto heaven, and God hath remembered her iniquities. Reward her even as she rewarded you, and double unto her double according to her works; in the cup which she hath filled, fill to her double. How much she hath glorified herself, and lived deliciously, so much torment and sorrow give her, for she saith in her heart, I sit a queen and am no widow, and shall see no sorrow. Therefore shall her plagues come in one day, death and mourning and famine; and she shall be utterly burned with fire; for strong is the Lord God who judgeth her. And the kings of the earth, who have committed fornication and lived deliciously with her, shall bewail her, and lament for her, when they shall see the smoke of her burning, standing afar off for the fear of her torment, saying, Alas, alas, that great city Babylon, that mighty city; for in one hour is thy judgment come. And the merchants of the earth shall weep and mourn over her; for no man buyeth their merchandise any more.

“The merchandise of gold, and silver, and precious stones, and of pearls and fine linen, and purple, and silk, and scarlet, and all thine wood, and all manner vessels of ivory, and all manner vessels of most precious wood, and of brass, and



iron, and marble, and cinnamon, and odours, and ointments, and frankincense, and wine, and oil, and fine flour and wheat, and beasts, and sheep, and horses, and chariots and slaves, and souls of men. And the fruits that thy soul lusted after are departed from thee, and all things which were dainty and goodly are departed from thee, and thou shalt find them no more at all.

“The merchants of these things, which were made rich by her, shall stand afar off, for the fear of her torment, weeping and wailing and saying, Alas, alas, that great city, that was clothed in fine linen and purple, and scarlet, and decked with gold, and precious stones, and pearls! For in one hour so great riches is come to naught. And every shipmaster, and all the company in ships, and sailors, and as many as trade by sea stood afar off, and cried when they saw the smoke of her burning, saying, What city is like unto this great city? And they cast dust on their heads, and cried, weeping and wailing, say, Alas, alas, that great city, wherein were made rich all that had ships in the sea by reason of her costliness, for in one hour is she made desolate. Rejoice over her, thou heaven, and ye holy apostles and prophets, for God hath avenged you on her, and a mighty angel took up a stone like a great millstone, and cast it into the sea, saying, Thus with violence shall that great city Babylon be thrown down and shall be found no more at all. And the voice of harpers, and musicians, and of pipers, and trumpeters, shall be heard no more at all in thee; and no craftsman, of whatsoever craft he be, shall be found any more in thee; and the sound of a millstone shall be heard no more at all in thee;

and the light of a candle shall shine no more at all in thee; and the voice of the bridegroom and of the bride shall be heard no more at all in thee; for thy merchants were the great men of the earth; for by thy sorceries were all nations deceived. And in her was found the blood of prophets and of saints, and of all that were slain upon the earth." Rev. 18 Chap.

Here we have Babylon "Fallen," that is, the thought of the orgasm of the sex act cast out of the consciousness of the soul. "And the merchants of the earth shall mourn over her, for no man buyeth their merchandise any more." All the commerce of the world revolves around the thought of the orgasm of the sex act. All ships of material wealth come into this port. Take this thought out of the consciousness of the race and commerce will cease and industrial strife would end. Money would have no more value.

Hence, Paul says, "The love of money is the root of all evil," that is, money secures what the carnal senses desires for their gratification. Remove from the consciousness of the souls of men, the thought of the orgasm of the sex act and nations will fight no more. The armies of the world will be disbanded. The navies of the nations will no longer plow the bosom of the seas. Liquor and drugs will have no more commercial value. Courts of contention will cease to exist. Medical doctors will retire from business. Industrial strife will be a thing of the past. Hatred will fade from the heart of man. Greed and avarice will go out of consciousness, for they all have their existence, and "move and have their being" within the thought of the orgasm of the sex act within the conscious-

ness of the souls of men, and the truth as the angels declared it at the birth of the Savior will be a living reality, within the hearts and souls of the race. "And suddenly there was with the angel a multitude of the heavenly host praising God and saying, Glory to God in the highest, and on earth peace good will toward men." Luke 2:13-14.

When Babylon "falls" within the consciousness of the race, this passage of Scripture will be realized within the consciousness of the souls of the race. When the thought of the orgasm of the sex act is removed from the consciousness of the race, there will be no more strife, no more hatred no more grief, and no more death. Universal love and life will be the law realized in consciousness. In the eighteenth chapter of Revelation we have the dress, the odours, and perfumery of the female and of her daily costume clearly described. The odours, the ointments, the fine linen, the pearls, and the gold, with which she daily decorates herself in order to arouse the Babylon within the male and to control him, is clearly set out in the eighteenth chapter of Revelation. The merchandise of the stores of the ages, that the female uses to decorate herself with in order to control the male, are here clearly described. And all come unto this law of death, and finally, "The souls of men" die.

Here is the law as described in Genesis, when lust and death entered into consciousness. It is the law of the female attracting the male sexually, and the female being subject to him sexually and the male having dominion over her sexually. Remove the thought of the orgasm of the sex act from the consciousness of the soul and you abolish



this law, and the souls of both male and female are set free from the death of the lust of the flesh. And that is what is declared in the eighteenth chapter of Revelation, that shall finally take place when the soul is resurrected to life and from the death sting of the serpent.

When the thought of the orgasm of the sex act is removed from the consciousness of the race, the eighteenth chapter of Revelation will be fulfilled. There will be no more "Pipers and harpers and musicians and trumpeters in Babylon." This is the music that stirs the carnal senses and makes men murder, and leads them to strife and to war. There is music of the soul and music of the sex brain. The music of the soul is of spiritual notes and is harmony. The music of Babylon is the music of the carnal senses, it is the music that fills every ballroom, while females bedecked in pearls and gold and adorned in fine silks and perfumed with ointments swing to the arms of the males and arouses their lust and passions.

These notes of music which stir the Satan and hell within the souls are the "harpers and musicians, and pipers, and trumpeters of Babylon." Remove from the consciousness of the soul, the thought of the orgasm of the sex act and they will be heard no more. They will be lost in the night of eternal silence. In the city of Zion, there will not be a note of discord, for there will not be a thought of the orgasm of the sex act within the consciousness of the souls that inhabit that city of spiritual purity. In Zion the senses will not exist in thought. The merchants of the earth who have brought their merchandise to Babylon, and the kings of the earth who have committed forni-

cations with her, cannot enter the city of Zion with their filth and corruption.

The thought of the orgasm of the sex act cannot enter this city, and without this thought within the consciousness of the soul there is no merchandise, no corruption, no crime, no darkness, no disease and no death. Remove the thought of the orgasm of the sex act from the consciousness of the souls of the race and the race will need no more jails, and no more hospitals, for there will be no more criminals, and no more sickness. "And in her was found the blood of the prophets and of the saints and of all that were slain upon the earth."

The carnal minded world believing in the pleasure of the thought within the consciousness of the soul, that there is pleasure in the orgasm of the sex act, has murdered the prophets and the saints through the ages. Every prophet and saint who has been murdered since Cain slew Abel; that is, since lust murdered the soul, has been murdered because that prophet and that saint told them that there was no pleasure in the thought and consciousness of the orgasm of the sex act.

A carnal minded and fallen race had rather believe the lie of the serpent than the truth of the Christ; hence, a carnal minded race has murdered the saints in all ages. Man in his fallen state will not give up the lie of the serpent. He still believes that there is pleasure in the orgasm of the sex act and lives for this lie, and dies as the result. The race is eaten up with syphilis, leprosy and diseased with gonorrhea, as the result of the lie of the serpent that there is pleasure in the thought of the orgasm of the sex act. This thought within the consciousness of the race has filled the insane

asylums and hospitals in all ages. It has produced the blind, dumb, deaf and halt in all ages. It has at times almost depopulated the earth.

These are her "Plagues" which she has visited upon the human family. "Therefore shall her plagues come in one day, death and mourning and famine, and she shall be utterly burned with fire, for strong is the Lord God who judgeth her." All of the sickness, diseases, sorrow and suffering of the race comes out of the lie of the serpent that there is pleasure in the orgasm of the sex act, and this thought within the consciousness of the race shall finally destroy the race. But the saints shall have no part in this destruction. Those who have overcome the desire and thought of the orgasm of the sex act within the consciousness of their souls shall have no part in this death and destruction. "Rejoice over her thou heaven and ye holy Apostles and prophets, for God has avenged you on her." Rev. 18-20.

The saints who shall overcome this lie of the serpent shall move on into that Holy City where there is "no night," and where the thought of the orgasm of the sex act does not exist in consciousness, and therein they shall tune their harps to music divine and to soul sense, and every note shall vibrate with the Glory to God. "And there will be no more death there," because there will be no consciousness of the thought of the orgasm of the sex act within the souls in that city. The thought of the serpent and the lust of the flesh will be lost in consciousness.

Then we shall be "Like him," and shall "See him face to face" with the eye spiritual. The soul will be pure and non-carnal. This is the state of



the Christian, and the redeemed. This is the Christianity that Jesus preached and the Apostles taught. Paul, the Apostle of the Gentiles, labored hard to bring this idea out clearly to the people dead in sensuality. The Apostle of the Gentiles did his best to show that there was nothing spiritual between the sexes and that marriage was only a carnal state for the purpose of regulating the lust of the flesh, as man was in a fallen state. That marriage and natural propagation is the result of the fall and must finally be overcome before the soul can be spiritually pure, was his message to the Gentiles.

He taught and the Bible teaches, that the husband should have only one wife, and the wife should have only one husband. This is true, not because marriage is holy, but because it is carnal. If it were a holy state, the more wives a husband had the more holy he would be, and the more husbands a wife had the more holy she would be, but the Bible restricts one husband to one wife and one wife to one husband, because the marriage state is a carnal state.

Jesus taught this truth and so did the Apostles. It is a carnal state. Our Lord lived above it and the Apostles who had wives, never had any more children after they were called to be Apostles; and those who were single when they were called to be Apostles never married. St. Peter was an old man when he was called to be an Apostle and he left his wife and children and went forth to preach. He did not desert them because he did not want to care for them, but he had to leave them and depart from their presence and household in order to go forth and preach the gospel.

## CHAPTER XVI.

“Remember now thy creator in the days of thy youth, while the evil days come not, nor the years draw nigh, when thou shalt say, I have no pleasure in them.” Eccl. 12-1. The “evil days” come to all at puberty. It is then that the serpent as the “Babbler” begins to talk to the consciousness of the soul and to send carnal thoughts and lust desires into the consciousness of the soul. These evil thoughts and lust desires that come to all the race at puberty is the flaming sword that was placed at Eden which keeps man from partaking of the tree of life and turns all the race out of Eden into the thought of the carnal senses to spiritually die.

This is the “obsession” of all the race. All the race is “obsessed” at puberty. When these “evil days” come, parents should watch their children. They have then reached the age when the serpent will destroy them if they are not guarded and protected. When these “evil days” come, the young girl begins to perfume and to dress herself and to decorate herself with pearls, fine linens and ointments, so as to attract the opposite sex. These are her silly and foolish days, and mothers should watch their daughters during these evil days of silly girlhood.

During these evil days boys become malicious and vain, and they want to show their masculinity so as to attract the opposite sex. Fathers should watch their sons during these “evil days,” for in these days future manhood is made or de-

stroyed. This law of evil days "obsesses" all of the race. It is in nature, everywhere. Go to a baseball game, and when some strong, vigorous man makes a good play and thereby demonstrates his sex forces, some woman will hallow in his honor and praise, and all the women will follow in laudation. They do not know why. The forces that make them applaud the man are in their sex senses.

A woman with her ovaries removed would not applaud. She would not see anything to applaud for and it would all seem silly to her. She would have the lust senses in the brain, but would not have the sex senses that forms the magnetic current of thought in consciousness, so as to make her applaud the masculinity of the opposite sex.

Go to some beauty show where femininity is on dress parade, and the men will have their eyes on the most beautiful woman from the viewpoint of physical perfection. They are "obsessed" by her through their sex forces. A Eunoch in the audience will not be "obsessed" by her. He would see nothing within this physical perfect woman to make men go insane. He might have the lust senses within the brain but he would not possess the sex senses so as to form the circuit of animal magnetism and produce a state of carnal consciousness so as to go mad over the woman. This law of "obsession," which comes when the "evil days" come, is within the sex senses of the generative organs and the lust senses of the brain.

The author has a friend who was standing in a newspaper office, talking with the editor a few days after the election when Mr. Blaine and Mr. Cleveland ran for the presidency of the United States. The election was close. It had not been



determined who was elected. It was late at night. A large crowd stood outside of the newspaper office yelling itself hoarse as the returns would be announced from time to time. This friend of the Author's was a man of intelligence and a great thinker, and he said to the editor of the paper, "Why don't those men go home to their wives and families? Why do they stand there at this late hour of the night wasting their energies and acting like mad men?" In a few minutes this gentleman departed from the editor of the paper and the office and went out by the crowd on his way home. He stopped for a few minutes with the crowd to look at the returns as they were announced on the board. He soon found himself yelling and whooping to the top of his voice with hat in hand and mad like the rest of the audience.

He came to himself and said, "Why, a few minutes ago I was remarking what fools these men be," and he immediately left the audience, and as soon as he got out of the audience he quit hallowing, and put his hat on his head and went home. He said while in the audience that he was charged with some kind of mental impulse that made him mad like the other men but he didn't know the nature of this force. He personally related this state of facts to me. The truth is, when he stepped in the midst of the audience the sex current charged him as it did all the other members. Had he been a Eunoch it would not have affected him.

This sex mesmerism is the state of thought that all France was in during the French revolution. It is the state of thought that all Europe is in today while murder and death prevails there.

It is the state of thought that every nation is in when it goes to war. It is the "evil days" of the race and the "obsession" of the race.

During the generation in which I live, there is a notorious evangelist in the United States. He was a baseball player before he was an evangelist. He had to be a man of great sex force and sex virility to be a baseball player. The same sex force that made him a baseball player makes him a great evangelist of the senses. At his meetings the people will gather by the thousands and the sexes will be about equally divided. The minus and plus pole, or the negative and positive current of the sex current, are about equal at these meetings. The current soon forms. He does not permit any talking, coughing nor even a child to cry in the audience. If a child begins to cry, he makes the mother take it out at once. If a man begins to cough, he tells him to put his handkerchief over his mouth. He will not permit any disturbance; he wants the entire thought of the audience upon him.

His experience has taught him that the slightest disturbance in the audience breaks the current of the thought, but by demanding their undivided attention he can keep the audience thinking in unison and as a unit. In this way he commands their attention. He is virile and well sexed, and with his sex forces he begins to appeal to their senses by preaching his senses. The sex thought of the senses becomes strong as it grows more intense, the audience begins to quiver, women will become pale and look white. Their sex senses are more sensitive than those of men. They are the first to be affected.

As he discourses the women will begin to tremble and finally some will begin to squeal, others will laugh, and others will hallow, some will scream and others will cry. The women being the negative of the sex current they begin to attract the men in thought, and the men then become affected. Then confusion begins. Babylon is in her glory. The night of the carnal senses is in the consciousness of all. They want to flee somewhere from the darkness and death to light and truth. They do not know where to go nor what to do. In this stampede of confusion and mental and spiritual night of Babylon, "like sheep and all gone astray," in spiritual thought, they start toward the well sexed evangelist, as he stands and appeals to their senses, yelling and screaming as they go.

Their sex senses and the night of Babylon have them within the consciousness of carnality. They know they are within the night of spiritual darkness and are within the midst of evil thoughts, but they know not the cause nor the way out. How different was the preaching of Jesus! The Master said, "While ye have the light, believe in the light, that ye may be the children of light." \* \* \* John 12-36. The "light" is the spiritual understanding of the law of spirit. It is overcoming the senses and carnality in thought and consciousness. The Master was cool and deliberate in all he said. In all of his preaching throughout Galilee and Judah, he never appealed to the senses. He never appealed to the carnal in thought. He was the light, because he lived above the senses and the carnal in thought, and with the light of the spirit within his own consciousness, he imparted



that light to the consciousness of his hearers.

There was no "shouting," hallowing and squealing under his preaching. He did not appeal to the sex senses of the women so as to make them faint. He was calm within his own soul. He understood the law of truth, and lived it and had it within his own consciousness, and with this light of the truth permeating his every thought, he commanded the carnal in thought to come out of the consciousness of his hearers, and the "devils obeyed him," and the souls of men and women were cleansed from every carnal desire and lust thought. This was the "light" of truth that he preached.

We do not wish to question any man's motive. We do not desire to question the good motive of the baseball evangelist referred to. We simply give this illustration to demonstrate the law of the senses. As the "evil days" come upon men and women, they realize that some evil force has them within its grasp. That is the reason that so many young men in the adolescent period go into the ministry. They feel that during these days that they are in the grip of an evil force, and they want to flee to some source to rid themselves of the evil that has them within its grasp. Some become street preachers during these evil days. The sex force within them and the babbling of the sex senses drive them to the streets, where they hallow and whoop and yell at the passersby.

They do not know it is their carnal senses within themselves that is causing them to do this. It is their own state of carnal consciousness that is making them thus yell and scream at the passersby. Remove their testes, and they will be quiet.

and serene, and will be seen no more on the street corners in a state of mental confusion, yelling at the public. As they grow older and overcome the carnal in thought, they cease from this foolishness of the senses. A woman with her ovaries removed does not want to become a preacher, politician or public speaker. This state of confusion is all within her senses. It is within the sex senses of the generative organs and the lust senses of the brain. As the truth of this illustration, take the nine months following the period of this evnagelist, or one of his kind, and you will find that there is a greater number of births than the nine months preceding his coming.

When these "evil days" which "obsess" the race shall have been overcome in thought and consciousness, the night of confusion will fade away in thought and the day dawn of the morning of the resurrection will be present in the thought and consciousness of the race. There will be no more materia medical doctors who are supported by the sins of the senses. There will be no more clergymen preaching the senses for a livelihood. There will be no more manufacturing plants manufacturing powder and lead to kill men. There will be no more men of war plowing the ocean waiting to belch forth death and hell. There will be no more opiates and drugs to feed the senses. There will be no more ointment and perfumery and fine linens, pearls and gold, adorning the senses. All of these are of the "evil days" that come at puberty and "obsess" the race.

This "obsession" is mental. It is within the mind. The Author knows of a man who became very much "obsessed" by a very beautiful woman.

She was almost physical perfection. Her very presence aroused all the evil within him. He could not keep her out of his mind and thoughts. He was married and had a wife. He was much stronger physically than his wife. This beautiful woman remained in his thought and consciousness until he almost destroyed his wife sexually. The thought of this beautiful woman would arouse the evil within him, then he would use his wife to gratify his lust, and while performing the sex act with his wife he would have the other woman in mind all the time. He admitted this.

He was committing adultery with the other woman in thought while committing the sex act with his wife. Jesus had reference to this state of thought when he said, "You have heard of old, that thou shalt not commit adultery, but I say unto you, whosoever looketh upon a woman, to lust after her, hath committed adultery already within his heart." Sin is within thought. The thought must become pure for the soul to become pure. In the seventeenth century, there was a sect in England that taught physical purity. To belong to this sect, you had to abstain from the sex act. Their conception of purity was physical. The old people who joined this sect were aged, and too old to indulge the sex act. They were very cruel in thought. They whipped and beat the young people and drove them out of the community that they found caressing or making love. If a young man or woman went wrong he or she was driven out of the community and ostracized and frequently almost beaten to death.

The thought of these old people was cruelty. It was hatred. They were mad with nature be-



cause nature had failed them, and they were jealous of the young because of their sex vigor. These sects of physical purity have existed in all ages. They are founded on hatred and jealousy. Physical purity is not Christianity. It takes spiritual purity to constitute true Christianity. The soul must be pure in thought and a virgin in thought to be a Christian. And the soul that has overcome and is pure in thought and a virgin in thought sympathizes with every other soul that is struggling to overcome, and pities every poor soul that falls and has compassion upon it. The soul that has overcome loves the soul that has fallen and would save it. That was the state of purity of our our Lord.

The old who have overcome should sympathize with and have compassion upon the young who have come into the "evil days," and have yet to overcome. Solomon speaks of the days when "desire shall fail." Eccl. 12:5. This is the sex desire. The mere fact that this desire has failed does not make the soul pure. The soul must overcome the desire in thought and consciousness and become a spiritual virgin for the soul to be pure and to be a child of God.

If a so-called minister of the Gospel today, who has a wife and family, were to do what St. Peter did, he would be arrested and put in jail for "non-support." St. John and St. Paul were not married when they were called to be apostles and they remained single. They knew that marriage and all propagation was through the lust of the flesh. St. Paul said, "Unto the pure, all things are pure, but unto them that are defiled and unbelieving, is nothing pure; but even their mind and

conscience is defiled." Purity must first exist in thought. If the soul is pure, it is above the carnal in thought, and neither "Marries nor is given in marriage," and does not propagate.

Impurity must first exist in thought before it is manifested in the body and in act. The soul must first be impure in thought before the corporeal man marries in the flesh. If the soul is pure in thought the corporeal man does not marry within the flesh. But if the soul cannot remain pure in thought and a virgin spiritually, then the corporeal man should marry in the flesh. If the soul cannot remain pure in thought the lust of the flesh should be gratified in a normal and natural way. It should not be gratified in an abnormal way and by mental "self abuse."

St. Paul speaks of this class of sinners. He says, "They profess that they know God, but in works they deny him, being abominable and disobedient, and unto every good work reprobate." Titus 1-16. The mental "reprobate" is as evil as the physical "reprobate." For the "unclean" must first exist in thought. St. Paul in first Timothy, third chapter, the first to seventh verses, describes the duties of a minister. He says, "This is a true saying, if a man desire the office of a bishop, he desireth a good work. A bishop then must be blameless, the husband of one wife, vigilant, sober of good behavior, given to hospitality, apt to teach; not given to wine, no striker, not greedy after filthy lucre; but patient, not a brawler, not covetous. One that ruleth well his own house, having his children in subjection with all gravity; for if a man know not how to rule his own house, how shall he take care of the church of God. Not

a novice, lest being lifted up with pride, he fall into the condemnation of the devil. Moreover he must have a good report of them which are without; lest he fall into reproach and the snare of the devil."

St. Paul here was writing to Timothy, and advising Timothy what class of men that he, Timothy, should ordain as elders. The Greek word here translated "Bishop," means an elder, or the one to have spiritual charge over the local church. In the early Christian churches they had many elders in each local church, and a chief elder who presided at the meeting of the local church. This was true of the Jewish synagogue. The early Christian church was patterned after the Jewish synagogue in government. These elders whom Timothy was going to ordain were married men and had wives and children when they became Christians, and so did St. Peter, and so did some of the other Apostles.

But some of the Apostles who were not married when they were called to be Apostles, namely, St. John and St. Paul, never married. If a man is married when he becomes a Christian and enters the ministry, he should remain with his wife and care for his children, but if he is not married he should remain single. If he is not pure enough to contain his seed and remain single he is not pure enough to be a minister. The elders here whom Timothy ordained were already married. There is no evidence that they ever begot any children after they were ordained elders. None of the Apostles ever begot any children after they became Apostles. They never became fathers after they became Apostles, and no minister of the Gospel



should. He is not a minister of the Gospel unless he is pure enough in thought to contain his seed and remain single. St. Paul here says that these men who Timothy was going to ordain as elders should only be the husband of one wife. He means thereby that marriage is of the carnal and therefore a man should only have one wife and not many, that carnality should be restrained as much as possible and therefore a wife should only have one husband and a husband only one wife, and if they become Christians and ministers while in this married state they will cease to beget children, and retain their seed.

St. Paul here couples wine, greed, lust for money, pride and insobriety as companions of lust, and says an elder should be free from all of these; for they are the "devil," that is, they are of the thought of the orgasm of the sex act; that the lust of the flesh and all of these things go hand in hand. They are of the sex brain. The desire for them originates out of the sex mind. The Christian who is pure enough in thought to live above sex lust has overcome all of these things. Hence, St. Paul says, an elder should be free from the lust of the flesh and above all these things in thought.

St. Paul dealing with this idea of lust says, in First Timothy, 2:9-15: "In like manner also that women adorn themselves in modest apparel, with shamefacedness and sobriety, not with broided hair or gold or pearls or costly array; (but which becometh women professing godliness) with good works. Let the woman learn in silence with all subjection. But I suffer not a woman to teach nor to usurp authority over the man but

to be in silence. For Adam was first formed and then Eve, and Adam was not deceived, but the woman being deceived was in the transgression. "Notwithstanding she shall be saved in child-bearing if they continue in faith and charity and holiness with sobriety."

Here we see that the orgasm of the sex act in thought and act was the original sin and the "fall." That Eve was deceived by lust. Hence, the Christian woman should not decorate herself with gold, pearls and costly array. These decorations of her person have their origin within the lust of the flesh. The purpose is to attract the attention sexually of the opposite sex. She should not "braid her hair."

A woman's sex powers are symbolized through the hair of her head. Hair is symbolic of sensual thoughts. The well sexed person is a hairy person. "Esau" was the "hairy man." He was the symbol of sensuality and lust in thought. Jacob, his brother, was the symbol of the soul. Jacob was the symbol of the spiritual. Esau is the Cain within us. Esau is lust. Abel is spirituality. Hair types sensuality; hence, the Christian woman should not perfume and bedeck her hair so as to arouse the lust of the man. Her sex pride is symbolized by her dress and her hair. Hence, in the Catholic Church, the sisters submit to having their heads shaved and hair cut when they become nuns. This means that they have given up lust and sensuality and surrendered all the pleasures of the senses for the spiritual life. As we become Christians, we surrender up the thought of the orgasm of the sex act with the consciousness of the soul and all the

pleasures of the senses that are connected therewith.

Paul, in First Timothy, 3:8-16, lays down the same law for deacons and their wives that he does for the ministers. He requires of them that they be holy, and non-carnal, and non-sensual. The Church of God is Holy. The body of Jesus was the symbol of the Church of God, and his body was holy because the Christ within him had overcome every thought of, and desire for, the orgasm of the sex act. He had overcome lust completely in thought and consciousness; his body was pure because his soul was pure. Hence, he said, "He that eateth of my flesh and drinketh of my blood, has eternal life." "He shall never die."

Again he says, "He that followeth me in the regeneration of the spirit shall never die."

His body was pure because his soul had overcome lust. All who follow him in the "regeneration of spirit," overcome lust and "eat of his body and drink of his blood," and "they shall never die." The "eating of his body and the drinking of his blood," is the following of him in the "regeneration of the spirit," and the overcoming of lust within the consciousness of the soul. It is the overcoming of every thought of and desire for the orgasm of the sex act, and all the carnal appetites of the flesh connected therewith.

The purity of the soul is the "eating of his flesh and the drinking of his blood." At the marriage in Cana, our Lord turned water into wine. Wine is the symbol of blood, and our Lord said, "Flesh and blood cannot enter the kingdom of heaven." The water that he turned into wine at Cana was symbolic of the thought of the occasion.



The wine that he made out of water was symbolic of what was within the consciousness of the contracting parties to the marriage relations on that occasion; they had lust within their consciousness, and the wine was the symbol of this fact.

Marriage is the "honorable" way to gratify the lust of the flesh, but it is of the lust of the flesh just the same. St. Paul in writing to the church at Corinth deals with the sex question from this viewpoint. Corinth was a city deep in sensuality; and St. Paul did his best to lead the church there out of the darkness of sensuality into the true life of the non-sensual and the spirituality of Christianity. He said, "Now concerning the things whereof ye wrote unto me; it is good for a man not to touch a woman. Nevertheless, to avoid fornication, let every man have his own wife and let every woman her own husband." First Corinthians, 7:1-2.

Here, St. Paul places Christianity on a non-sensual basis, that is. the true Christian has overcome the sensual and can retain his seed. This is the state of consciousness that the soul must finally reach in spiritual understanding, to be holy and a child of God. Yet if the soul has not reached that degree of understanding and holiness in thought, wherein the seed can be retained, then marriage is the correct state through which the flesh should be gratified. But the soul must finally overcome the lust of the flesh, in order to enter into the state of holiness. Continuing, the Apostle Paul says, "For I would that all men were even as I myself. But every man hath his proper gift of God, one after this manner and another after that. I say, therefore, to the unmarried, and widows, it is good for

them if they abide even as I. But if they cannot contain let them marry; for it is better to marry than to burn." First Corinthians, 7:7-9.

St. Paul here sums up the whole question of the marriage relation. It is of carnality, but it is the natural state through which carnality is to be indulged. But carnality must finally be overcome for the soul to become holy and the son of God. If the soul has not reached that degree of spiritual perfection wherein the seed can be retained, then it is best to marry. But the soul will finally have to be purged from this state of carnality that causes the soul to marry in the flesh. "It is better to marry than to burn." That is, if lust is burning within your consciousness and thought and you cannot retain your seed, then you should marry.

But if you can overcome the "image of the beast," and the thought of the orgasm of the sex act and purge your soul from carnality and death, you should do so and refrain from marrying. All must overcome carnality finally, if they would see God. Hence, it was a death penalty under the Mosaic law to "spill the seed." It was and is, the most degrading state of fornication. It was the most polluting state of sin. The state of thought which caused the demission of the seed must be overcome for the body to be holy.

Socrates was put to death because of the paganism and the sex worship of his age. This philosopher was a Christian in thought. They said "that he corrupted the youth of Athens." And they said of Jesus "that he had a devil." Jesus taught that all evil was within the sex. Socrates tried to convey the same idea to "the youth of Athens," and

for this he was put to death. Socrates believed in the immortality of the soul, and that there was a Spiritual and all wise God, and that this Spiritual Creator was non-sensual in thought. The "Sage of Athens" was a Christian in thought, and his purpose was to elevate the morals of "the youth of Athens," but the carnal minded age in which he lived had him put to death, for teaching the source of evil within human nature.

The same thought that had Socrates put to death had our Lord crucified. This thought within the consciousness of the race, that there is pleasure in the carnal senses, must be removed from the souls of the race through the power of the Holy Spirit, before the race will accept the Truth of Christianity. God the Father was present in the flesh in the mind of Christ, and God the Father must be shed abroad in the hearts of the human race, through the power of the Holy Spirit, before the race will surrender lust and accept Christianity.

The Godhead is one in substance, and Three in manifestation—God the Father, God the Son, God the Holy Spirit, is one mind and three manifestations of the one mind, and the race must come into the consciousness of the Mind of the Father, through the Holy Spirit, to accept the Christ mind. The Christ came into the flesh and lived above the sex lust of the flesh, and kept the law of holiness, that the Holy Spirit might be given to the race, and sanctify the souls of men from the lust and death of the flesh.



## CHAPTER XVII.

“And the children of Israel did evil in the sight of the Lord.” Judges, 3:7. The evil the children of Israel did here, in the sight of the Lord, was the same evil that Adam and Eve came into the consciousness of when they yielded to the serpent and were driven out of Eden. Evil is sex lust. It is the gratification of the carnal senses. Israel means, a “Soldier of God” or “I am the light of God.” It is the soul in the spiritual image of God. It is the soul that has overcome carnality in thought. Israel as a people, types the soul and is spiritual life. And Israel as a people was continually going into carnality and doing evil in the sight of the Lord, and Israel today is doing the same thing.

The souls of men are today going into carnality as of old, and doing evil in the sight of the Lord. The children of Israel were told to drive out the Canaanites, the Phillistines, the Amorites, the Hittites, the Perizzites, Hevites, Jubusites, and the other pagan peoples of Canaan. These pagan peoples had their gods of the carnal senses. Their worship was sex worship, and the children of Israel had to drive them out of the land of Canaan before they could inhabit this land. Israel types the soul and spiritual worship. Israel is symbolic of the soul in communion with God through spiritual sense.

The soul cannot commune with God through the material senses. The soul only communes with God through spiritual sense, as it overcomes the carnal senses in thought. Israel, therefore, was

told to drive out these pagan people. This is symbolic of the soul driving out from consciousness the carnal senses and communing with God through spiritual sense. Every man and woman has the Canaanites, the Phillistines, the Amorites, the Hitites, etc., within his or her carnal senses. The Hitites, the Amorites, the Canaanites and all the pagan senses are located within the generative organs and the lust senses of the brain. They are the mind of sex worship. They are in all the race, and must be driven out of the consciousness for the soul to overcome sex worship and the gods of the carnal senses, and to worship God as spirit and to commune with God through spiritual sense. As we drive out the Canaanites, the Amorites, the Hitites, etc., with their carnal senses and lust thoughts, from the consciousness of our souls, we are resurrected in thought and consciousness from death, and commune with God as spirit through spiritual sense. This is the land of Canaan flowing with milk and honey which the soul shall inhabit as it overcomes carnality in thought.

All human love is based on the sex. It is of the carnal mind. It is hatred. This is a hard saying, but it is true. The strongest tie of the sex mind is that of the male and female, that is, husband and wife. If the man really thinks more of the woman than any other woman and chooses her in preference to all other women, for a wife, because she appeals to him more than any other woman sexually, he will kill her before he will see her leave him and go to another man. This is the highest law of selfishness. The same is true as to the woman. If the man really appeals to her more than any other man, and she desires him in prefer-

ence to all other men, she will kill him before she will see him desert her and go to another woman. This is the law of the serpent and is hatred and death.

The next strongest law of the serpent is a mother's affection for her child. So intense is this carnal affection, that mothers have been known to kill their offspring rather than to see them taken from them. They love the child for their own selfish gratification, and not for the child's sake. The brother of the flesh loves the brother of the flesh for selfish reasons, because they both came out of the same womb and the same loins. He does not love the brother for the brother's sake, but for his own selfish person, and this law is true of all human loves and ties, it is all carnal and selfishness. Hence Jesus said, "Unless a man hate his father and his mother, his brother and his sister, he cannot be my disciple." The word hate here, in the original, does not mean malice of the human heart, but it means to turn from, that is to say, that unless a man turns from the human thought and the human selfishness of carnal love of fleshly relatives, he cannot be the spiritual disciple of Christ. That is to say, man must overcome the carnal in thought and sex worship in consciousness and all the human ties that grow out of same, in order to be spiritual. When man has overcome the law of these carnal senses, he has overcome human selfishness, and has turned from the carnal in thought to the spiritual in thought.

When man has thus turned from the carnal in thought to the spiritual in thought, he comes into spiritual understanding and a state of brotherly love, and all who have overcome the lust of



the flesh and are the children of God are his brethren. Spirituality begins where carnality ends. Unselfish spiritual love begins where the selfish affection of the senses ends. We are all brethren as we overcome the carnal and the law of the senses. Human thought and human ties are of the selfishness of the carnal senses. Human ties end where Christianity begins. Human parents end where the fatherhood of God begins in thought and consciousness.

When we shall have overcome the carnal senses and the law of human parents in thought, we will be the children of God, and all will be brethren, and universal love will be the law. All carnal ties are of the selfish thought. Marriage and the sex relations between husband and wife is the essence of this thought. It is the highest state of sex worship. We do not mean to say that the race should not marry here in this fallen state. They should until carnality is overcome. We are not in favor of free love. The thought is offensive to us, and non-scriptural and non-Christian. Marriage is the highest moral state of the lust of the flesh. But it is a carnal state and not spiritual state. It is of the lust of the flesh and non-Christian in thought. Every man and woman who enter into the marriage state thereby admit they are "obsessed" with each other, and are impure and unholy in thought. Yet, the marriage state should be preserved.

They should enter into this state as a means of preserving the morals of society. They should marry until they overcome the lust of the flesh, and a man should only have one wife and a woman one husband, and this marriage state should be

for life. If they become divorced neither party to the marriage state should remarry during the life of the other. The marriage contract is for life. This is the Scriptural doctrine. Jesus so taught, and it is clearly set forth in the Bible. But the fact that the opposite sex get married does not make their relation spiritual. It is of the carnal just the same, and that which makes them marry must finally be overcome in thought and consciousness for the soul to become pure in the spiritual image of the Father.

A church, or a Christian organization has no concern of marriage except to see that its members observe the moral obligation, and that each woman only has one husband and each husband one wife. Marriage should never take place in the edifice of a Christian church. The edifice of a Christian church is sacred, and should be so regarded. Marriage is not. It is of the lust of the flesh. A marriage ceremony should never be performed by a minister of the Gospel, he has no right there. His concern is of the soul, and not with the carnal senses. Jesus, during his three years of ministry, never went about marrying people, but in preaching the Gospel, that they might overcome that which makes them marry, that is, the lust of the flesh.

His Apostles never married people. Their mission was to preach the Gospel, and to get men and women to overcome that which makes them marry, and to forsake the carnality of the flesh and to come into the light of the Christ. Their mission was to save the souls of men and women from that which makes them marry, and the souls of all human flesh must finally overcome that which

makes them marry to become the children of God.

Marriage with the orthodox Jew was a domestic rite and so it was with the early Christians; it never became a religious rite in the Christian church until after Christianity became adulterated with the pagan religion of the Roman Empire. When the light of truth went out, the night of error came in. When the light of Christianity became dim, the night of paganism hung like a pall of death over the infant Christian church. Then a pagan priesthood made marriage a sacrament of the church for the purpose of revenue. Let us hope and pray for the dawn of the Christian truth, within the consciousness of the race, when marriage will be again considered in the true light of Christianity. When the day dawn of Christianity shall again rise within the heart of the race, we shall again see marriage considered as a matter of the carnal senses and not of the soul.

That is what Jesus taught, that is what the Apostles preached. It is the truth. Let the marriage state be observed and retained, as the law and custom to regulate the carnal state of the senses until carnality shall finally be overcome and the true marriage shall be realized in thought and consciousness when all souls, who shall overcome the lust of the flesh, shall be of the "heavenly bride," and married to the Christ. This is the only Christian marriage.

Holiness is non-carnality. God is holy, and as the soul becomes non-carnal in thought it becomes holy; and this holy state of consciousness is the seeing of God. It is the realization of God in consciousness. This is seeing him "face to face." When the "Christ shall appear," "We shall be like



him," that is, we will be non-carnal in thought and in a holy state of consciousness; and in this holy state of consciousness, we shall see him with holy eyes and spiritual vision. All carnal sight is of the senses, and unholy. When we shall overcome the "beast" in thought, that is, the consciousness of the orgasm of the sex act, we shall be holy, we shall have the "image" of Christ. The soul will be like him, in thought.

This thought is spiritual. Holiness is life eternal, and unholiness is carnality and death. The Apostle Paul brings out this idea in First Corinthians, 7:14, "For the unbelieving husband is sanctified by the wife, and the unbelieving wife is sanctified by the husband, else were your children unclean, but now are they holy." "To sanctify" is to overcome carnality. The Apostle Paul here is speaking of the duty of a Christian wife to a non-Christian husband. He means that she should have such influence over him that he will give up carnality and become a Christian; and he means that a Christian husband should have such influence over a non-Christian wife, that she will surrender lust for holiness. And as they surrender carnality, and in proportion as they become spiritual, in that proportion will the offspring be spiritual; that is, the less carnal they are the less carnal the offspring will be. In other words, the carnal images and lust desires within the consciousness of the parents when the child is begotten and conceived are bequeathed to the offspring. This is hereditary sin. Therefore, there should be as little carnality in thought and consciousness as possible in the minds of the parents when the child is being begotten and conceived.

In proportion as parents approach holiness, in that proportion will the offspring be holy. But of course there is some carnality in all carnal conception, and "Therefore the child is conceived in sin and shaped in iniquity," and must be born of the spirit, before it can overcome carnality and see God face to face. But the less carnal the parents are, the less lust and carnality the children will have to overcome. St. Paul further says, "Now concerning virgins, I have no commandment of the Lord, yet I give my judgment as one that hath obtained mercy of the Lord to be faithful. I suppose therefore, that this is good for the present distress, I say that it is good for a man to so be." First Corinthians, 7:25-26.

The "distress" of which St. Paul speaks is the "distress" of the lust of the flesh, it is within us all; so he says, "It is good for a man to be a virgin." That is, he who has reached that high state of spirituality whereby he has overcome the lust of the flesh and can retain his seed, without marriage, has reached a goodly state. The Apostle further says that those who marry "Shall have trouble in the flesh." First Corinthians, 7:28. He further says, "Nevertheless, he that standeth steadfast in his heart, having no necessity, but hath power over his own will and has so decreed in his heart that he will keep his virgin, doeth well." First Corinthians, 7:37.

Here the Apostle places the whole question of marriage and non-marriage on the basis of the spiritual state of the soul. If you have reached that state of holiness wherein you have overcome the lust of the flesh and can retain your seed, then you have reached a blessed state and should not

marry. Your soul is now entering Zion and the spiritual presence of God. If you have not reached this holy state and are still in bondage to the lust of the flesh and the "image of the beast" is still within the consciousness of your soul, and you cannot retain the seed, then you should marry, but this state of carnality must be overcome before your soul can be holy and enter the presence of God.

The Apostle concludes the whole argument with these words, "So then he that giveth her in marriage doeth well; but he that giveth her not in marriage doeth better." First Corinthians, 7:38. In other words, the Apostle says, if you cannot contain the seed, marry, but you will finally have to overcome it to enter that state of holiness which is Godly, but if you have overcome and do not have to marry, then you "Doeth better;" you are nearer the kingdom of God and the city of Zion, "For the grace of God that bringeth salvation hath appeared to all men, teaching us that denying ungodliness and worldly lusts, we should live soberly, righteously and godly, in this present world." Titus 2:11-12.

"Worldly" lust is sex lust; it is the orgasm of the sex act in thought, and all the lust of the flesh that come therefrom. Whiskey, drugs, strong meats, and all carnal dissipations, have their origin in the sex lust. To live soberly, righteously and godly in this present world, is to live above the thought of the orgasm of the sex act within the consciousness of the soul.

When you have conquered this thought in the consciousness of the soul you have conquered all the other lusts of the flesh. St. Paul says,



"This know also that in the last days perilous times shall come. For men shall be lovers of their own selves, covetous, boasters, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy, without natural affection, truth breakers, false accusers, incontinent, fierce, despisers of those that are good, traitors, heady, high minded, lovers of pleasure more than the lovers of God. Having a form of Godliness, but denying the power thereof, from such turn away." 2 Tim. 3:1-5. Here St. Paul names the sins of this world, and sums them all up as having one original cause; that is, that they all originate in the sex brain.

"Now the spirit speaketh expressly, that in the later times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits and doctrines of devils, speaking lies in hypocrisy, having their conscience seared with a hot iron; forbidding to marry and commanding to abstain from meats which God hath created to be received with thanksgiving of them which believe and know the truth." First Timothy 4:1-3. Here Apostle Paul is speaking of hypocrisy of formality, Christianity does not consist of forms and "Rites" but in overcoming the carnal in thought and consciousness. The "Forbidding" to marry of which St. Paul speaks is the result of unnatural carnal desires. He does not mean that those who have been holy should abstain from marriage. But he is talking about the carnal minded who are deep in unnatural lust and who gratify their lust in an unnatural way. Men "Who are lovers of men" and women who are "lovers of women." These abnormal persons desire to gratify their lust with those of their own sex. The Author knows of a case in the

court records in one of the states of the United States where a young woman was very much infatuated with another woman; they were in love with each other. The attraction was an abnormal sex attraction. They were infatuated with each other sexually. Finally, one of the young women decided to get married and gratify her sexual desires naturally with the male. The other woman became very jealous and killed her. She was tried for it in the courts. These facts were developed in the court records.

The Author personally knew of a man who was married and had a family, who was a "man lover." He was a handsome man and of a good family. One night he was caught in his office, nude, with other men, who were "men lovers." There they were indulging the gratification of the lust in abnormal ways with each other. They were arrested. These two cases that the Author recalls to mind illustrates the law of this abnormal sex state of mind. It is a perversion of the serpent's mind.

Cases of this nature are around us daily. They are in society in every generation. They existed in St. Paul's day, and he wrote against them. They have existed in all ages of the world, since the serpent mind entered the consciousness of the race. They were in Sodom and Gomorrah and Sodom and Gomorrah are with us today. These unfortunate people, frequently, are born with this perversion. Sometimes they acquire it after being born. But as a rule these abnormal desires are inherited. A man while having sex relations with his wife frequently will have in his mind and his consciousness, the image of some handsome young

man; this, of course, is sex perversion; but a child is begotten in this state of perverted thought and if it is a male, when it develops to sex maturity it is a "man lover." The Father had the image of his own sex in his mind when begetting the child. This is the law of "like begetting like." The mother may have a perverted state of thought, and have in her consciousness and mind the image of some woman when the child is conceived, and when the child comes, if is a girl, it will be a "woman lover." The child has in its consciousness what was in the consciousness of the mother at the time the child was conceived. This is the law of "Like begetting like." Or the mother while carrying the child may carry within her mind the mental image of one of her own sex and lust for her, and the child when it comes, will probably be a "woman lover." if it is a female. This is the law of "like begetting like."

A father should never have the image of a male within his mind when begetting a child, neither should the mother have within her mind the image of one of her own sex while conceiving or carrying a child. All abnormal thoughts and images should be kept out of the mind of the parents while begetting and conceiving. While committing this act they should be as pure in thought as possible; nothing abnormal should enter their state of thought. The seducing spirit which St. Paul speaks of here and the "Doctrines of devils," are these abnormal state of thoughts. They are the abnormal lust of the flesh. They "forbid marrying" because of their depravity. Marriage is the natural state to indulge lust. These abnormal states are of depraved minds. St. Paul



writes to the church at Rome at length on this question: Rome was the center of sensuality and of sex perversion in the days of St. Paul. The Apostles Peter and Paul, strived long and hard to elevate the church there above the carnal, into a clear conception of the spiritual.

The age was so deep in carnality it was hard for the Apostles to teach the church at Rome to understand clearly the truth of Christianity, and that all carnality is of the Satanic and death. St. Paul in writing to the church at Rome and speaking of these perverted ones says, "Wherefore God also gave them up to uncleanness through the lusts of their own hearts. to dishonor their own bodies between themselves. Who changed the truth of God into a lie, and worshiped and served the creature more than the Creator, who is blessed forever, Amen.

"For this cause God gave them up unto vile affection; for even their women did change the natural use into that which is against nature; and likewise also the men leaving the natural use of the woman, burned in their lust one toward another; men with men working that which is unseemly, and receiving in themselves that recompense of their error which was meet.

"And even as they did not like to retain God, in their knowledge, God gave them over to a reprobate mind, to do those things which are not convenient; being filled with all unrighteousness, fornication, wickedness, covetousness, maliciousness; full of envy, murder, debate, deceit, malignity, whisperers, backbiters, haters of God, spiteful, proud, boasters, inventors of evil things, disobedient to parents, without understanding, covenant break-

ers, without natural affection, implacable, unmerciful, who knowing the judgment of God, that they which commit such things are worthy of death, not only do the same, but have pleasure in them that do them." Romans 1:24-32.

These perverted states of human thought have existed in all ages of man since the fall. This perversion is within the mind, and what is within the mind is manifested in act. It is a disease of the soul. It is sin. This disease of thought has cursed the race in all ages. These diseased people are around us daily. They are the class whom Jesus "healed." They are the class who were "possessed of the devil" in Jesus' day. Our Lord cast out of the thought and consciousness all perversion of those diseased, with this perverted state of thought, and "healed" them. That is, he restored them to "right" thinking. He restored the soul to the right state of consciousness, and to that state of thought wherein it thought pure thoughts. This is the Gospel.

Sex mesmerism is darkness and death. The Author now personally recalls a living illustration of this law. He knew of a leading physician who became polarized sexually by a handsome woman. He was completely sexually mesmerized by her. He could not break the current. It was within his consciousness and his thought. It had him within its grasp. She would not marry him, and he could not rid himself of the sex mesmerism. He closed his office and quit his practice. Retired to a room in a hotel and refused to go out of the room. For years he remained in this hotel without leaving the room. He had his meals sent to him and there he sat day after day, for years, thinking of this woman.

She was in his consciousness day and night. He remained in this room for years in this state of thought until he expended all of his money, then his friends had to support him. The Author was personally a guest within this hotel for many weeks and knows these facts to be true. The proprietor of the hotel related the facts in detail to the Author. This man was sexually mesmerized and so is all the race more or less. The race has been sexually mesmerized since the serpent was manifested in consciousness.

Individuals become sexually mesmerized and slaughter and kill each other. Women become sexually mesmerized and want to preach and murder men. Men become sexually mesmerized and go on the street corners and hallow and whoop at the passersby as they go by and call themselves ministers of the Gospel. The thought of evil is within their own consciousness.

Nations become sexually mesmerized and go to war. The race, as a race, is sexually mesmerized, hence the greed, strife and hatred that prevails within thought. "These are the nations that set in darkness." The Christ overcame all sex mesmerism in thought and the race must break this current in thought and come into the light of the spirit if it would be free. But you cannot force the Gospel upon the carnal minded. The gospel is the spiritual light of truth, within the consciousness of the soul. It is the day dawn of spiritual light which drives the darkness of the night and the lust of the flesh out of the consciousness of the soul.

The Gospel is the spiritual ideas of God within the consciousness of the soul, and where the spir-



itual ideas of God are in thought and consciousness the lust of the flesh cannot be. But you cannot force this Gospel upon people. They must be willing to accept it before you can impart it to them. It is an individual and personal matter. To illustrate the truth of this law, the Author begs to relate a case in point. The Author has a personal friend who is a physician. He was a widower and at about sixty-two years of age, became infatuated and sexually mesmerized by a handsome young woman. She was personally a delightful lady and he married her. The old man was trying to be young again. In the evil imaginations of his heart he was living his youth over again. Personally, he was a most agreeable gentleman, but in his old age he had become sexually mesmerized by this beautiful young woman and was living a lie in thought to himself. He was imagining in his own heart he was young, when he knew he was not. He and the Author were personal friends, and the Author attempted to discuss the idea of his Work, "The Truth About the Bible," and impart to him the idea that all lust, insanity and disease of the race had their origin within the sex. The physician rebelled at the very suggestion of the thought. He said, "That is nasty, I would not let that book come in my house." The physician was not conscious of the fact that it was his own state of thought that made him repudiate the book and rebel against the idea it contained.

He was bowing down in the thought and consciousness to the sex mesmerism of this young woman. Her sex forces were his god. Evil prevailed in his own consciousness and thoughts,

hence, all was unclean to him. The truth as disclosed in the book, condemned his own state of consciousness, and hence he fled from the idea, and would not even investigate it. This is the law of sex mesmerism. As the Author stood and looked into his face he thought, the day will come when you will realize the truth as contained in the book "The Truth About the Bible." I saw him in the imagination of my own mind a few years hence, when the young wife shall have sapped his vitality away and he will be an old, decrepit man. Brain power will be gone, neck will be sunken in the back, he will be drawn in the shoulders and stooped physically and faint in thought. As I saw the future of his career in my mind's eye I thought, the day will come when you will wish that you had known and understood the "Truth of the Bible." His young wife is a good woman and she was well sexed and virile. It would not take her many years to send him to a premature grave. This is the law of the serpent. I thought as I looked into his face, the day will come when you will remember what Solomon said, when he said, "Remember now thy Creator in the days of thy youth, while the evil days come not nor the years draw nigh when thou shalt say I have no pleasure in them." Eccl. 12:1.

Those who waste their sex forces soon realize what Solomon said that "the years draw nigh when they shall have no pleasure in them." We see this truth illustrated before us daily. The vital forces are within the brain and the generative organs.

These are the nerve centers that control the nervous system, and the vitality of the human body.

Sex indulgence destroys the nerve cells of the brain and thereby shatters the nervous system and destroys both mind and body.

The law of sex mesmerism is in the solar system. The negative and positive laws control the solar system. The same law that brings the sexes together sexually holds the planets in their orbits. It is a law of attraction which is the law of the negative and positive. They move and the solar system affects carnal mind. The mind of the sex brain is controlled by the solar system. This is the law of astrology and of soothsaying and witchcraft. The law of astrology, soothsaying and witchcraft is the law of thought of the sex brain. Sex mesmerism is astrology, soothsaying and witchcraft in thought. Every woman realizes this in consciousness every twenty-eight days. Her monthly sickness is controlled by the law of astrology. She may not know it but this is the truth. Her moods are the moods of the senses of her sex brain, and the mind of the sex brain is controlled by the solar system. Hence, the solar system shall fade away and be no more when the Christ mind is fully realized in consciousness. When the race shall go out of this land of Nod and cease to wander around in this land of the carnal senses into which Cain and the serpent's mind carried the race, the race will cease to marry, and to be given in marriage. The solar system will fade away and the stars and seas will be "no more," and man who is spiritual in mind will awake from this night of the senses into the day dawn of the resurrection, and the light of truth in the image of his Father who created him.

This will be the second coming of the Christ



and this coming will be spiritual and within the consciousness of the soul. It will be day. Night will be no more. It will be light, and darkness will be no more. It will be in thought, and carnality will be no more in consciousness. It will be spiritual, and lust will be no more. This coming will be the unfolding of mind in the consciousness, and the senses, matter and sex will be no more in thought and consciousness.

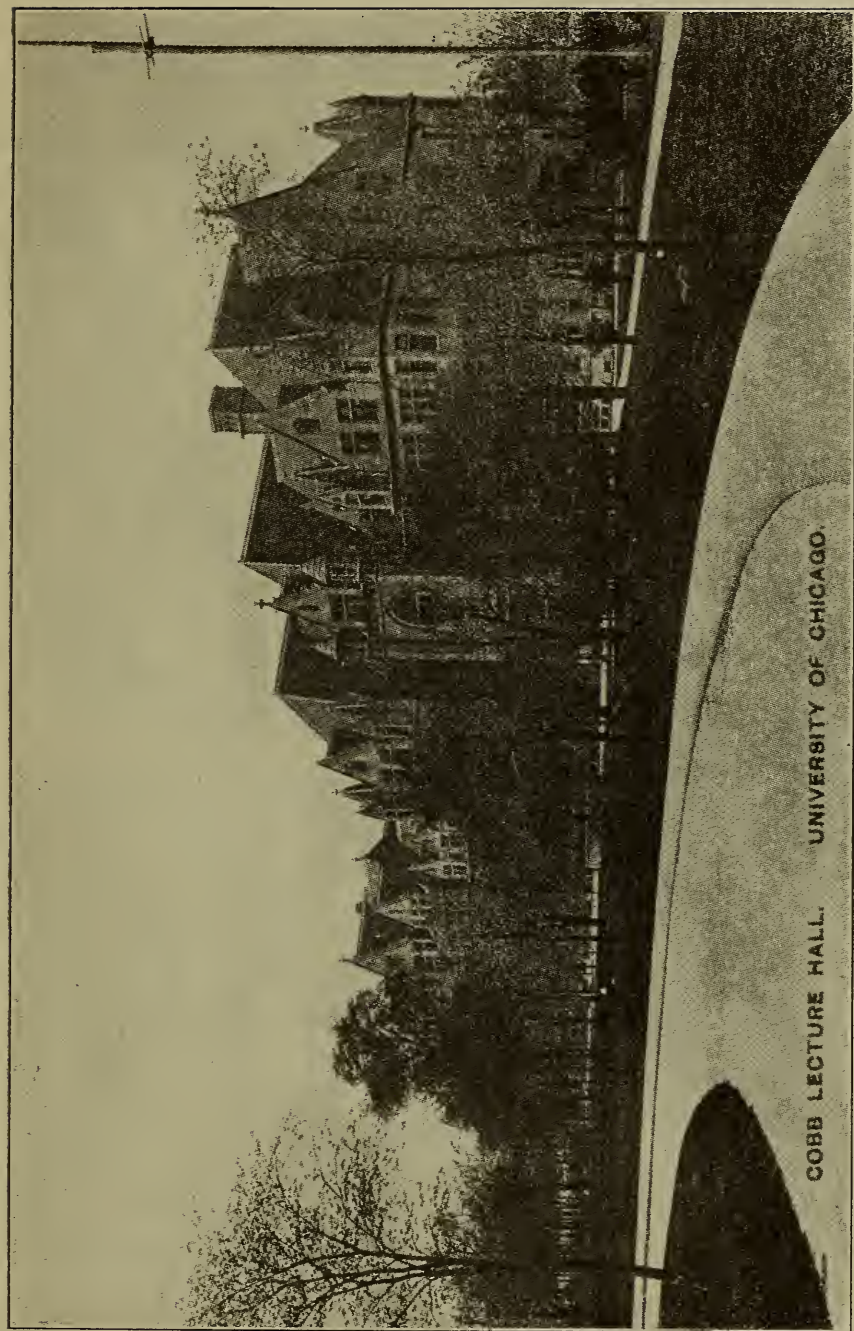
Jesus said, "If any man come to me and hate not his father and mother, and wife and children, and brethren and sisters, yea and his own life also, he cannot be my disciple. And whosoever doth not bear his cross and come after me, cannot be my disciple." Luke 14:26-27. All human ties of blood relation is sex mesmerism. Human affection of blood relation is sex mesmerism. They are of the sex mind and sex brain. They are carnal in nature and non-spiritual. They are selfishness, and the spirit is non-selfishness. It is love. "God is love." And God is spirit. To be a Christian means to overcome all these ties of sex mesmerism and come into the Christ mind.

This Christ mind is non-carnal and non-selfishness. The word translated "hate" here means to "turn from." For the soul to be a disciple of the Christ it must "turn from" all these carnal ties of sex mesmerism in thought and consciousness. When we overcome these carnal ties of sex mesmerism and selfishness, we overcome carnality and we become the children of God and are brethren. When the race shall have overcome the carnal ties of sex mesmerism, all the race will be brethren and the children of God.

The prejudice against the negro is of sex

mesmerism. The prejudice against the Jews is of sex mesmerism. All race prejudices originate in the sex. When the Christ shall have adorned the consciousness of the soul the race will come out of this night of sex mesmerism in thought, and all the race will be the children of God and brethren.

"The cross" was the emblem of the generative organs of the male. That is where it had its origin. It was the symbol of cruelty in thought. Jesus died on the cross, and this was the emblem of the death of the serpent mind. We must all die in thought to this mind, to be disciples of the Christ. Our cross is the overcoming the serpent's mind. This was the Master's cross. He had his night in Gethsemane, and his morning of the resurrection. We must go through the night of Gethsemane and die on the cross that we would rise in the morning of the resurrection. We must go through the agonies of the senses of carnality, which is the night of Gethsemane, and die under the serpent's mind, which is the cross, if we would rise to the day dawn of the resurrection; and this day dawn of the resurrection is the Christ mind within the consciousness of our souls. And this Christ mind is spiritual and light and non-carnal in thought and is life eternal.



COBB HALL, UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO WHERE SIDNEY C. TAPP WAS A STUDENT IN 1893



## CHAPTER XVIII.

The Gospel is the new ideas of the divine mind; and the spiritual ideas of the divine mind is the only remedy that will cure the depraved and the diseased. Drugs and medicine will not do it. Depravity is in thought. It is in mentality. The Holy Spirit removes the perversions of the flesh and restores the soul to the "image of God" and the soul thus restored to this Holy state is "healed." "Wherefore God also gave them up to uncleanness through the lusts of their own hearts, to dishonor their own bodies between themselves." This is going on around us daily. It was practiced in the days of sensual Rome. It was a custom of Sodom and Gomorrah. This perversion has cursed the race in all ages. It is the lowest form of degradation.

It exists in mind and thought before it is committed in, act and the result manifested upon the body. The sensual woman who meditates upon the flesh instead of the soul can be seen in fashionable society with "her dogs," well perfumed, as her companions. She is "evil" at heart and "wicked" in her "imaginations." She is dishonoring her own body in thought, if not in act. She has Satan perverted within her consciousness. Jesus said, "Give not that which is holy to dogs." The pure in heart do not have thoughts of the dog as a carnal companion within their consciousness.

Only the perverted in thought and conscious-

ness desire the dog as a sex companion. "And likewise also the men, leaving the natural use of the woman, burned in their lust one toward another; men with men working that which is unseemly, and receiving in themselves that recompense of their error which was meet." These are they who "forbid" marriage. Not because they are spiritual and have overcome carnality; but because they are perverted carnally. They object to marriage because of its natural state of the flesh. They desire the unnatural things of the flesh, because they are diseased in thought and perverted in their imaginations. The Apostle Paul enumerates and names all of the evil of the flesh which flow from this "perverted" state of mind, and diseased imagination, and they are the sins which curse the race. The mission of christianity is to save the race from the lust of the flesh and the perversions of the lust of the flesh.

The Christ mind within the consciousness of the soul, casts out this diseased state of thought and "heals" the diseased soul. This state of purity, after the soul is healed spiritually, heals the mind and body. Jesus healed body, mind and soul, by casting out of the consciousness of the souls of men all lust perversions and lust thoughts. To sum up the substance of the Apostle Paul's writings on this question (and he wrote more extensively than any of the other Apostles on it), can be said in a few words. The sum total of the Apostle's argument is that all lust is spiritual death, but if you cannot contain the seed, you should marry. There should be no perversion of the serpent's mind. But all lust must finally be overcome for the soul to be saved. Lust was the origin of death and therefore

lust, which is death, must be overcome before the soul can have life. The Apostle Paul is in accord on this question with all the other inspired writers and with the Master himself.

"Behold I stand at the door and knock; if any man hear my voice and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him and he with me. To him that overcometh, will grant to sit with me in my throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down with my father in his throne." Rev. 3:20-21. The master overcame the sex lust of the flesh. "He was God within the flesh" because he overcame the lust of the flesh. He was "in the world," but not "of the world," that is, he was in the flesh without being of the flesh. The desire for the orgasm of the sex act did not enter the consciousness of his being. The thought and consciousness of the orgasm of the sex act never entered the consciousness of his soul. The lie of the orgasm of the sex act within the consciousness of the soul is the essence of death. He overcame this lie of the serpent's mind and overcame death; hence, He was the "Sinless son of God" and "The light."

If we would be the sons of God, we must overcome this lie of the serpent in thought and consciousness as did the Master. He "Stands at the door and knocks," if any man will hear his voice, he will open the door of spiritual understanding so that the soul may roll back the carnal senses in thought from the consciousness of the soul and commune with God, and have life eternal. There is no communion with the Father except, as we overcome the lust of the flesh in thought and consciousness. The serpent's mind which causes them to marry and to give in marriage here in the flesh,



must be overcome before the soul can be the bride at the "Heavenly marriage."

As we overcome the lust of the flesh, we overcome death, and partake of life, and become the bride of the "heavenly" marriage. When lust shall have been completely overcome in thought and consciousness, we shall overcome death and have eternal life. This is the "Church triumphant." While we are battling and warring against the lust of the flesh here in this fallen state, and fighting the serpent's mind that we may come into the Christ mind, we are of the "Church militant."

Jesus said, "Get thee behind me, Satan, thou art an offense to me." Satan here is the orgasm of the sex act in thought and consciousness. The orgasm of the sex act in thought and consciousness is the supreme essence of the Satanic mind. Our Lord banished this thought from his consciousness. He was so pure in thought he said that this thought was an "offense to him." As we become pure in thought the filth of the lust of the flesh becomes an "offense to us." The carnal must become "offensive" to us before we can love the spirit. Our Lord said to Peter, "Lovest thou me?" Peter said, "Yea, Lord, thou knowest that I love thee." The Master had overcome the Satanic mind and the lust of the flesh was offensive to him. For Peter to love the Master all that is carnal had to be offensive to Peter. Peter was honest in his reply. He had reached that degree of spiritual understanding wherein the lust of the flesh was an offense to him; hence, he could say, "Yea, Lord, thou knowest I love thee." When we shall have become so pure in heart that the thought of the orgasm of the sex act shall be an "offense"

to our souls, then we can say with Peter, "Yea Lord, thou knowest that we love thee." Then we are Christians. And we are not Christians until we have reached that degree of spiritual purity and spiritual understanding.

There are two kinds of passions. There is a passion of the soul and the passion of the sex brain. There is the spiritual passion, and there is the passion of the lust of the flesh. The essence of the passion of the lust of the flesh is the orgasm of the sex act. All other passion of the flesh originates in the essence of this thought. Our Lord's passion on Calvary was a spiritual passion. The passion of the lust of the flesh and soul passion are opposite in their natures. Lust passion is death and soul passion is life. He yielded up death on Calvary and triumphed over death. His passion on Calvary was spiritual and of soul. For our souls to partake of his passion, we must overcome the passion of the serpent's mind. We must overcome death which is the serpent's mind, to obtain life. When David said, "Oh Lord, deliver me from mine enemies," he was not speaking of a foreign people or a foreign population; he was speaking of the sex senses of his sex brain and the lust senses of the brain.

They were his "enemies," and they are the enemies of the human race. They are the enemies of the soul. David had yielded to his enemies and had been in outer darkness spiritually. The race has yielded to its enemies and the race is spiritually dead. The race has yielded to its enemies in all ages since the serpent entered into consciousness, and the race has been spiritually dead in all ages. The enemies of David are our enemies. They are

the enemies of the soul, and the passion of the flesh and the thoughts of the sex brain must be overcome, if we would partake of the passion of the soul.

It was the "enemies of David" that caused the sensual minded woman to have a ruler to put John the Baptist to death, because John the Baptist's preaching reprimanded her and rebuked her sensuality, and condemned the man who was her co-indulger in vice. It was the "enemies of David" that caused Ananias and his wife to lie for money in the meeting of the Saints of Jerusalem. This lie which was produced by the "enemies of David" caused their death. It was the love of money that caused them to lie, and this thought is within the sex brain where the "enemies of David" are located.

"The enemies of David" cause men to kill women and women to kill men through jealousy. "The enemies of David" produce murder daily. The crimes of the race are located within the "Enemies of David." They deceive the race. The Satanic mind is located within the thoughts of the sex brain and these thoughts are the "Enemies of David." They will cause the man and woman to indulge sexually, until the stronger destroys the weaker and the weaker then murders the stronger as revenge.

The Author recalls personally, a case where the man was the stronger and the woman the weaker. She broke down. She had an eternal vengeance against him, in her mind. He had to sleep as it were, "with one eye open," for he was afraid that she would murder him at any hour of the night. The Author recalls another case



where the woman broke down. She was beautiful. At the "change of life" she lost her mind. The husband placed her in the insane asylum. She had an innate consciousness that he was the cause of her condition. She would look at him with staring eyes and say, "I hope you are satisfied, you caused it." This insane woman was conscious deep down in her soul that the "enemies of David" were the cause of her being insane; that she was a victim of lust, was written within the consciousness of her soul. She is one of the millions that the "Enemies of David" have seduced and destroyed during the ages. It was the "enemies of David" that caused Ham to outrage his father, Noah, while his father slept, and the descendants of Ham were "cursed" as the result of the sin of the "enemies of David." Ham became the father of Canaan. The Canaanites were a sensual people. They typed the carnal senses. Noah said, "Cursed be Canaan, a servant of servants shall he be unto his brethren." This is the beginning of the negro race.

The negro as a race is better sexed and more sensual than the other races. As a race negroes are in bondage to sensuality. This is the "cursed" and Noah said, "God shall enlarge Japheth and he shall dwell in the tents of Shem." The other races can dwell in each other's "Tents;" that is, each other's beds; they may marry and intermarry and amalgamate, but the negro as a race will not amalgamate with the other races. He will amalgamate with another race, so far and no farther. To a certain degree his blood will co-mingle with that of the other races, and then the limitation is reached. The law of the "curse" is there. The serpent's curse is there.

The negro personally emits an odor that is offensive to the white man. This odor has its origin within the sex. And I am told by intelligent negroes that the white man emits an odor that is personally offensive to the negro. This is a sex odor.

The races cross at this point. The difference between the race is one of sex. The question between the negro and the other races is a sex question. It is written in nature as the result of the law of the serpent, and you cannot change nature. In the United States of America there are two million and eight hundred thousand mulatto negroes. White men are the fathers of these mulattoes. The reason is this: the negro woman is better sexed than the white woman, and the sensual minded white man therefore desires a negro woman. She gives him better sex satisfaction. This law of the serpent has caused the white man of America to degrade his own race and to pollute and to destroy the morals of the negro race. The white man instead of Christianizing the negro race in America, has polluted the negro race.

The sensual minded white woman will accept a negro man sexually for the same reason. He is better sexed than the white man. The races had as well look at this question as it is. The Bible is true and the race question is written in nature. The only solution of the race question is Christianity, and I mean by Christianity, the overcoming of sensuality. When the negro as a race has developed from the sensual into the spiritual, he will command the respect of all races. His "ostracism" as a race is of the mind of the serpent. He

should know this as a race and realize it. And as a race he should seek spiritual freedom. He should make every effort to elevate himself from the carnal into higher thought and spirituality. The white man should aid him and help him to work out his problem from this viewpoint. The Christ mind which is non-sensuality, is the only solution of the race problem. May the negro, as a race, realize this truth, and walk therein until he has freed himself from the sensual and elevated himself to the same plane of thought as the other races of the earth.

The Bible is a book of dual thought from Genesis to Revelation. It is the purest book ever written, and it is the most obscene book ever written. It would not be true, unless it was the purest book ever written and the most obscene book ever written. It describes the purity of the soul when freed from the bondage of the sensual. It narrates the state of thought in the consciousness of the soul when man was wholly spiritual. It describes man before the fall when he was in the "image of God." It likewise relates the carnal nature that produced the fall. The Bible is a book of soul and of carnality. It is a book of soul thought and of the thought of the sex brain. It is a book of the spiritual senses and of the carnal senses. It is a book of life and a book of darkness. It is a book of life and a book of death. It is a book of matter and a book of spirit. It is a holy book and an obscene book. It is the book of redemption and the book of degradation. It is the book of souls who shall finally overcome sensuality and re-enter Paradise and be within the "image" of the Father. It is the book of the souls who bow down to the "Beast"



and shall pass out in this state of carnal darkness and death. All through the Bible, it is the "Righteous" and "Unrighteous." It is the "corrupt" and the "incorrupt." It is the "holy" and the "unholy." It is the spiritual and the material. It is light and darkness. It is life and death. It is "Heaven" and "Hell." And these are states of thought.

The "righteous" are those who have overcome carnality. They are holy in thought. They have been "resurrected." They have "overcome the beast." The thought of the orgasm of the sex act is an offense to them. Their very thought is spiritual. The "unrighteous" are the carnal minded in thought and consciousness. They are "bowing down" to the "Beast," which is the sex lust of the flesh. The orgasm of the sex act in thought is their God. This is Baal. It is gods of the heathen. It is idolatry. The Holy are those who have overcome every thought of Baal. The thought of the orgasm of the sex act is an "offense" to them, as it was to their Lord and Master when he was here within the flesh. The holy have overcome the carnal senses in thought. They are pure.

They are "undefiled." They are the "redeemed" from the "earth." They have overcome the corruption of the lust of the flesh. To them all things have been "made new." They have been "sanctified." They follow the "Lamb wheresoever he goeth." They have the same mind of the Christ. They have "accepted the Christ as their personal Savior;" that is, they have surrendered up the lust of the flesh in thought and have become like him. He was the "Word of God," because he was non-carnal and had the mind of the Father.

You and I, dear reader, erect the true altar

within the consciousness of our own souls as we overcome the belief in the pleasure of the orgasm of the sex act. As the spirit lights up the consciousness of our souls and we overcome the lie of the serpent that there is pleasure in indulging the carnal senses, the true altar is erected within our souls. As the Cherubims over the altar, which are the spiritual ideas of the divine mind, flow into the consciousness of our souls, the Cherubims at the gate of the Garden of Eden, which are the carnal ideas of the sex brain, are banished from the consciousness of our souls and we become the sons of God.

Mr. Henry Polk Lowenstein, of the Kansas City Bar, expressed this spiritual idea in his address at the first anniversary held in Kansas City, Missouri, in 1914, on my book, "The Truth About the Bible." He said, in concluding his address, "What is man, whence cometh he, whither goeth he, and what is his destiny? I know not; but this I know, that somewhere, above the clouds, away beyond the stars in the limitless realms of eternal love, at the throne of God, man stands revealed in the likeness of his Father, and this likeness is the Christ, and this Christ is Life, and Life is God, and God is All."

Mr. Lowenstein here expressed the idea of man as spiritual; the spiritual image of his spiritual father. All who erect the true altar within the consciousness of their souls shall be within the spiritual "image" of their spiritual father.

Carnality knows no love. The mind of the serpent is hatred. If a man love a woman, he would not pollute her body. If a woman loved a man, she would not destroy him and defile him.

The sexes are conscious of this truth; hence they frequently kill each other after they have polluted and defiled each other. Their souls are conscious that the lust of each defiles the other. Paul preached this doctrine and if sacred history and sacred tradition can be believed, it created much disturbance. St. Thecla, was a beautiful young woman. She was engaged to be married to a man of her day. She sat in the window of her house and heard the Apostle Paul preach in the adjoining house and heard him say, "Blessed are they who observe the instructions of Jesus Christ, for they shall dwell in eternal light. Blessed are they who for the love of Christ abandon the glories of the world, for they shall judge angels and be placed at the right hand of Christ, and shall not suffer the bitterness of the last judgment. Blessed are the bodies and souls of virgins; for they are acceptable to God, and shall not lose the reward of their virginity; for the word of their (Heavenly) Father shall prove effectual to their salvation in the day of his Son and they shall enjoy rest for evermore." Apocryphal, New Testament.

She retained her virginity, but the man to whom she was "betrothed" had Paul arrested and arraigned before the court. The charge made against St. Paul was that he was breaking up marriage engagements, homes, and husbands and wives. The same charge would be made against any man who would preach the Gospel today openly as St. Paul did. If the Gospel were preached today as St. Paul preached it, so as the women could understand it and know what the Bible means, many women would become virgins and men who lust for



their bodies would kill the men who preach the Gospel.

So, dear reader, you can only give the gospel to those who are willing to accept it. Only those who are willing to give up the lust of the flesh are ready for the gospel.

I have written this book amid confusion. I have not had the money to employ a stenographer. A friend was good enough to let me dictate it to his stenographer in his office. People were going and coming and telephones ringing all around me as I dictated this book. I have not the money to have it printed. If it is printed at all it will have to be printed by friends. I have a friend who says he will have it printed. I hope he will. In one hour's time, while I was dictating this book, there has been money enough spent in Kansas City on lust to have had this book printed and placed in general circulation. There is enough money spent every twenty-four hours on lust and sensuality in Kansas City to print and circulate this book throughout the world and to all the race. The sex mind has millions to expend upon its gratification and the lust of the flesh, but man has no money to expend for the Gospel as Jesus preached it. I hope those who come after me and who accept the truth as Jesus preached it, will see that this book is circulated and given to the race. As I think of the millions in darkness it makes my heart weep. They sit in the night of darkness and know not the way to the light of day. The serpent has closed the spiritual eyes of their souls and they cannot see the truth.

As I think of the millions who go into their churches throughout the world Sunday after Sun-

day, where their senses are fed and their souls starved, and go away as ignorant as they came as to what constitutes sin, and as to what the truth of the Bible is, my soul weeps. Like Jeremiah of old, my tears flow. The more the senses of the race are preached to, the more jails, insane asylums and hospitals the race will need, for sin abounds.

"Then Jesus said unto them, Yet a little while is the light with you. Walk while ye have the light, lest darkness come upon you; for he that walketh in darkness knoweth not whither he goeth. While ye have light, believe in the light, that ye may be the children of light. These things spake Jesus, and departed, and did hide himself from them." John 12:35-36. The race walks in darkness. The carnal senses of the sex brain have closed the spiritual eyes of the soul in all the race. The race is wandering in the land of Nod, which is a land of the carnal senses, where the Cain mind has carried the race in thought and consciousness. Let us hope that the race will see the light as it was in Christ Jesus, and preached by him and his Apostles, and walk therein until the last lust thought and idea of the serpent's mind shall fade away from the consciousness of the souls of the race, and that all men may awake to the day dawn of this spiritual truth, which is the day dawn of the resurrection, and may see him face to face with the eyes of spiritual purity.

This day dawn of spiritual truth, within the consciousness of the souls of man, is his second coming, and all who have overcome shall shout with joy, "Glory to God on high."

The "Holy" have overcome the mind of the

flesh, and have come into the consciousness of the mind of the Christ. This is the "personal acceptance" of the Savior as your "personal Savior." It is the soul through the guiding power of the Holy Spirit, overcoming carnality and coming into its holy state of thought, where the soul discerns God as spiritual through spiritual sense. The "Unholy" are those who are yielding to the carnal thoughts. They have no spiritual discernment. They are not conscious of God as spirit. They are "Defiled" in thought. They are of the "earth" and "earthy;" that is, they still have the desire for the orgasm of the sex act within the consciousness of their souls. They are the "earth bound." They are the "devils" that inhabit the land of spirit. They are "possessed" with devils, that is, evil thoughts.

All ties here are of the serpent's mind and the sex brain. The law of human relation is the law of selfishness. The human mind does not love its own to any degree beyond the third generation. The human tie is so selfish that it seldom extends beyond the third generation. These human ties are idolatry, hence, Jesus said, "Who is my mother, my brother and my sister? He that doeth the will of my Father who is in Heaven." He repudiates all human relations, because it is of the sex brain. It is of the serpent's mind. The race is still out in the land of Nod, where Cain went to get a wife and is wandering around in this land of the carnal senses worshipping its human offspring and human relations as idols. The Eves are still bringing forth their Cains through lust and saying "They are of the Lord," and the Adams are still begetting their "Seths" in their "images." - Some are drunkards, and some are murderers; and the



Cain mind is still begetting sons and naming them cities—states of thought. But when the carnal shall have been overcome and banished from consciousness, there will be no human ties and selfish relations; and the idols of the senses and of human thought and the sex brain will be no more.

When carnality shall have been overcome completely, within the consciousness of the soul, we shall all be the children of God, and brethren. In spirit life where only the pure in heart are, we will all be brethren and the children of God. The “undefiled” in that pure state of thought will have no idols and selfish ties. This law of spirit and this law of carnality is the language of the Bible. It is the language of all thought. The proper names of the Bible have either a spiritual or a carnal meaning. They all have their origin in the thought of a soul or in the thought of the sex brain—the serpent’s mind. Noah means “rest.” It is the spiritual state of the soul. “Noah found grace with God.” The Sabbath means the “Day of rest.” It was that age of consciousness when God made man in his own spiritual image, and man retained that spiritual image until the serpent’s mind entered into thought and consciousness, then man lost the “Sabbath,” and entered into carnality in thought. The Sabbath is symbolic of the spiritual rest of the soul, freed from and delivered from carnality in thought. It is the day of eternal life. When our Lord came forth from the Grave, he banished the thought of the serpent from the consciousness of the souls and restored the soul to the spiritual image of the Father. This is the resurrection and life eternal.

The Christ was resurrected on the “first day

of the week," and the "day of rest," that is, Sunday, or the Sabbath, was changed to that day, because it was the day when our Lord came out of the grave and resurrected the soul from the carnal image of the serpent and death, to the spiritual image of God and life eternal. The Sabbath is the spiritual image of God within the soul. Our Lord had this image within his consciousness during the three years of his ministry, hence, he said, "The Son of Man is the Lord of the Sabbath," and "Healed them" on that day. The soul in the spiritual image of God does not believe in, nor desire, the thought within the consciousness of the soul of the orgasm of the sex act, therefore, that soul is not subject to the law of the carnal senses and death. It does not believe in the pleasure of the senses, and therefore cannot be subject to the pain of the senses.

The resurrection is the overcoming of the serpent's mind, in thought and consciousness. When the soul overcomes the serpent's mind in thought and consciousness, it has overcome death. There was no death until the serpent's mind was manifested in consciousness. Sex lust was the original cause of death. The overcoming of sex lust is the Gospel, the resurrection, and life. The resurrection means, "The restoration to life," and death is not overcome and life is not restored until lust is overcome in thought and consciousness.

Adam was sexually mesmerised when he said, "This is bone of my bone and flesh of my flesh," and Eve was sexually mesmerised when she believed the lie of the serpent, that the fruit of the tree of lust was good, and this mutual sex mesmerism of the sexes produced death. All the race

has been sexually mesmerised ever since sex lust entered into thought and consciousness. The overcoming of this sex mesmerism in thought and consciousness is the overcoming of death, and is the resurrection.

When the race shall have overcome this sex mesmerism in thought and consciousness, it will neither marry nor be given in marriage, and will "die no more." Solomon expressed the idea when he said, "Let us hear the conclusion of the whole matter; fear God and keep his commandments; for this is the whole duty of man. For God shall bring every work into judgment, with every secret thing, whether it be good, or whether it be evil." Eccl. 12:13-14. The Commandments of God are spiritual in their nature. Those who keep the commandments of God, go in thought from the carnal senses into soul sense. Those who keep the commandments of God have overcome the sex lust of the flesh in consciousness and thought. Their works are good. Those who do not keep the commandments of God are still under the influence of sex mesmerism in thought and consciousness, and they worship "evil."

Their ideas and thoughts are carnal and lustful. They are still under the law of death. They are spiritually blind and in outer darkness in thought. Jesus said to his disciples, "I have meat to eat, that you know not of." His meat was the spiritual food of the soul. It was non-carnality in thought. He had overcome every thought of the serpent's mind, in consciousness. His thoughts were holy, and his desires were pure. His ideas were spiritual. He was God in the flesh. He was the manifestation of the ideas of the Father's mind



within the flesh. His disciples had not overcome the lust of the flesh sufficiently to understand him completely. They were approaching the truth in thought and consciousness, but they had not realized it completely in consciousness.

Day by day, as we walk in the footsteps of truth, we approach the Christ mind in consciousness and thought. Bye and bye, we shall overcome the serpent's mind completely in thought and consciousness, then we shall be completely resurrected, and shall know as we are known, and see him face to face. As the holy spirit comes into our hearts, the light of truth is shed abroad in thought and consciousness, and we overcome the serpent's mind step by step, and we shall finally overcome completely, through the spirit of truth, and be resurrected with the Christ, then we shall know the truth in all of its reality, and be the children of God.

All sickness, disease and insanity comes out of the mesmerism of the serpent's mind. The human race thus hypnotized by the serpent mind believes the lie of the serpent, that there is pleasure in the orgasm of the sex act, and hence, is subject to the law of pain and death. When we shall come out from under the law of sex mesmerism and be holy, as he was holy, we will not be subject to the lie of the serpent, that there is pleasure in the orgasm of the sex act, and can heal the sick as he healed them and restore the insane to their right mind as the Master did. When the soul is resurrected from the sex mesmerism of the serpent and is holy in thought and consciousness, it is not subject to the carnal law of the senses.

The Resurrection is going from the carnal senses to soul sense in thought and consciousness,

and the resurrection heals the sick and restores the insane to their right minds. When the last thought of the serpent shall be overcome in consciousness, the race will neither be sick "nor die any more." In soul consciousness, there is neither disease nor death, and only the soul knows God and only the soul is the child of God. And we only know God as our spiritual Father through soul sense, as we come out from under the sex mesmerism of the senses, and are resurrected in thought and consciousness, to the truth. May the Christ mind through the holy spirit guide all the race into the light of truth and awake the race from the night of sex mesmerism and death, before "the silver cord be loosed, or the golden bowl be broken."

If the women of the world could come into the consciousness of the Christ mind, the Gospel and the truth as the Christ preached it, they would throw their diamonds, pearls, fine linens and ointments to the earth, and cover themselves with sackcloth and ashes, and cry out for the light and to be free from the lust and death of the flesh. They would cease to submit their bodies to be defiled by men. If they could realize in consciousness what the Christ meant when he said, "For behold the days are coming in the which they shall say Blessed are the barren and the wombs that never bear, and the paps which never gave suck. Then shall they begin to say to the mountains, fall on us; and to the hills cover us." Luke 23:29-30. They would cease to submit their bodies to the lust of men, and the Kingdom of Heaven would be at hand. If men could come into the consciousness of what the Christ meant, when he said, "Except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish," they would

cease for human ambition, and to plunder each other and to pollute and defile the bodies of women; but would fall upon their faces and cry out for mercy, and to be delivered from this bondage of lust and death.

The soul that has overcome sex lust is "sanctified." The saints have cast out devils and healed the sick by this spiritual truth in all ages. The Author has lived for many years through this spiritual Truth, with a frail body and a shattered nervous system and an injured spine, as the result of five operations. He has lived through the law of this Truth. If he were spiritual enough, he could restore the perished nerves and the injured spine that the surgeons destroyed. But he has been through sin. He has known the opposite sex sexually. And with sorrow he realizes this has prevented him from obtaining that degree of spiritual perfection, to overcome physical laws and restore an injured spine and nervous system destroyed by surgeons. Yet he has lived for years in violation of every natural law, through the discernment of spiritual truth, and his understanding of the truth. The Truth is realized in consciousness, as the carnal senses are overcome in consciousness. Our Lord overcame the carnal senses completely in consciousness, and this was his resurrection and ascension, and as we overcome the carnal we are resurrected and when we shall completely overcome, we shall be "like him." This is the General Resurrection.

The Sabbath day will be the eternal day of rest to the "Sanctified." In that state of thought, carnality and the carnal senses will not prevail within the consciousness of the soul. This is the Sabbath.



The Sabbath is the state of spiritual thought and not a period of twenty-four hours.

Jeremiah means "Jehovah has appointed." Jesus means "Jehovah is Salvation." Joshua means "Jehovah is strong." Joel means "Jehovah is God." Jehovah means "The Eternal One." Jacob means "The supplanter." Isiah means "Salvation of Jehovah." Israel means "The soldier of God," or "I am the Light of God." Elijah means "Jehovah is God." Esau means "The hairy one, or sensuality." Adamah means Adam, "The earth, or the carnal man." Hell means "Hades," or the "Grave," that is the carnal thought and the serpent's mind which decays the material body and sends it to dust. During the orgasm of the sex act the soul is in Hell. It is then that the "image of the Beast," that is, carnal ideas, are written within the "forehead," that is, in the thought of the soul.

Thus, all through the Bible, the root meaning of Biblical terms, may be ascertained to represent the spiritual ideas of the soul or the carnal ideas of the sex brain and the lust of the flesh. These two laws run through the Bible; they are the language and the thought of the Bible. They are the languages of the tongue and the thoughts of the heart. The ideas of the sex brain are of the serpent's mind and are evil. The ideas of the soul are of the divine mind and they are good. The trouble with the race is, it wants to go to Heaven but wants to take hell with it. The race wants life, but it does not want to give up death. The race wants to retain the thought and the pleasure of the carnal senses and at the same time obtain life eternal. This cannot be done.

The belief of pleasure within the thought of

the orgasm of the sex act is death. This state of consciousness is Hell. Death and hell must be given up and overcome, in thought and consciousness, to obtain heaven and life. All belief in the pleasure of the carnal senses must be overcome in thought and consciousness before the soul can come into the spiritual understanding of God and obtain life eternal. As we overcome the carnal senses in thought and the belief in the pleasure of the orgasm of the sex act, we come into that state of spiritual understanding whereby we obtain spiritual sense, and see through spiritual sense, and understand through spiritual sense. We obtain the Gospel in thought and consciousness. "Revelation" means "to lift the veil." The veil that darkens the spiritual understanding of the soul and prevents the soul from seeing God as spirit through spiritual sense, is the carnal senses of the sex brain.

As these go out of consciousness the soul comes into spiritual understanding. As this veil of the carnal senses is lifted, the soul comes into that state of thought which is Christianity. It was the veil of the lust senses of the sex brain that was rolled back from the consciousness of the soul of Moses's, when God communed with him at the "burning bush" and gave to him the Ten Commandments on Mount Sinai. It was the lust senses of the sex brain that Elijah overcame completely in thought when he ascended out of the material body and "Went up to Heaven." And this is what we must do before we are Resurrected and go to Heaven. Heaven is a State of thought. It was the lust senses of the sex brain that Enoch overcame completely in thought and consciousness when

he "Walked with God," and "God Took Him." It was the lust senses of the sex brain that our Savior completely overcame on the Mount of Ascension when he went out of his material body and ascended into heaven. His "Ascension" was going out of the carnal completely in thought and into the spiritual completely in thought.

When he ascended, he overcame every thought of the carnal senses, and came into complete consciousness of the spiritual sense of the soul. The carnal senses were absolutely banished from thought and consciousness when he ascended.

"And he shall come like he went." When he comes, he shall banish from the consciousness of the souls who have overcome sensuality every thought of the carnal senses. They shall "be like him." They shall be completely spiritual in thought and consciousness. They shall be above the material and carnal in thought and consciousness. This is the general resurrection and the general judgment. It is overcoming completely the mind of the serpent, which is hell and death. The theologians are still looking for the Garden of Eden. Every man has the Garden of Eden within him, in proportion as he overcomes carnality. In proportion as he overcomes the belief in the pleasure of the senses and the thought of pleasure in the orgasm of the sex act he enters Eden. In proportion as he overcomes the carnal senses in thought he develops Eden within his own soul; and when man shall completely overcome the belief in the pleasure of the carnal senses, and the thought that there is pleasure in the orgasm of the sex act, he shall ascend in thought and con-



sciousness above the death sting of the serpent and be resurrected to eternal life.

All things shall be made "new to him." The Master said in his name that his followers should tread upon the "serpents." Serpents are carnal thoughts. They are the serpent's mind, and as the Christ unfolds within the consciousness of our souls, we cast out every carnal thought and "Tread upon serpents." As we overcome the lust of the flesh we cast out of our consciousness the "flaming sword," placed at the gate of Eden, and the "cherubims" placed at Eden. These are the carnal senses. They are the thoughts of the orgasm of the sex act within the consciousness of our souls. As we overcome this state of consciousness, the "cherubims placed over the altar, which are the spiritual ideas of the divine mind, flow into the consciousness of our souls and resurrect our souls to eternal life.

The mind of the sex brain is in all nature. It is in all things that are material. The planets affect the carnal mind. Sex polarization is everywhere in nature. Hence, "The Heavens shall roll away like a scroll," and the "Sea shall be no more." The material shall come to an end. "Nevertheless we look for a new heaven and a new earth wherein dwelleth righteousness." This "new heaven and new earth wherein dwelleth righteousness" is a spiritual state. It is the spiritual state of the soul, in the image of its Maker. In that Holy State, every desire is spiritual, and every thought is holy. But "The earth shall abide forever." The "earth" here is the carnal man with his sensual and corrupt thoughts. It is the state of the lost. They still have within their consciousness the be-

belief that there is pleasure in the indulgence of the carnal senses. They still believe in thought and consciousness, that there is pleasure in the orgasm of the sex act.

They have the "image of the beast" within their "foreheads," in thought and consciousness they are carnal. Will they ever overcome this lost state? We do not know. Our translation says, "It is forever." The original Greek reads, "For ages and ages." Does this mean eternal, or does it mean that they will finally work out of this lost state of darkness and come into the light of spiritual Truth, and the "image" of the Father? We do not know. God in his own wisdom and mercy knows; and with him and his mercy the destiny of those souls who have not overcome the serpent's mind and death, are left.

The Saints can pray for them. Those who have overcome death and the lust of the flesh can only pray and hope through the ages of eternity that the lost may finally come into the consciousness of the Truth and overcome death and have life. "And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God and the books were opened; and another book was opened which is the Book of Life; and the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books according to their works." Rev. 20:12. Every soul will be judged according to his carnal state or spiritual state. The deeper the soul has gone into carnality, the darker will be the night. The purer the soul is, the brighter will be the day. Those who have overcome "shall inherit all things."

They will be in the "image" of the Father; they will be "sanctified," their language will be

spiritual and their thought will be spiritual. The saints can commune, because they shall have the same language and the same state of thought. "There shall be no night there," for there will be no carnality and evil there. And there will be no "Shame." Before the "fall" when God made man "in his image," man was "Without shame." In "The Holy City" there will be no "shame." In this city all is pure. It is the holy state of thought. "They shall speak with new tongues." Their language will be spiritual and of soul. "They shall sing a new song." This song will be of soul sense and the music will be of spirit. "And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes, and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain; for the former things are passed away. And he that sat upon the throne said, Behold, I make all things new." Rev. 21:4-5.

This is the state of the redeemed. This is man in the spiritual "image" of his Maker. This is the state of holiness in which he was made before he fell. This is the resurrection and this state is spiritual and non-sensual and non-material. And with spiritual sense and notes divine, the redeemed will praise the Father throughout eternity. "And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire." Rev. 20:14. All that is carnal in thought is cast down to spiritual death, and this is darkness and night. It is the state of the "evil minded." It is the state of consciousness of those who have not overcome the "image of the beast." But those who have overcome the serpent's mind "And they shall see his face, and his name shall be in their foreheads." Rev. 22:4. They shall have the spiritual nature of



the Christ. They shall be holy in thought and consciousness. They shall be in the spiritual "image" of the Father, and there shall be no "More night and no more death" for them.

## APPENDIX.

Other books on the Bible by Mr. Tapp, "The Truth About the Bible," introductory price, \$2.00. "Sexology of the Bible," \$1.25. "Why Jesus Was a Man and Not a Woman," \$1.50.

"They will do more to empty our jails, insane asylums and hospitals than any idea that has ever been given to the world, in our opinion, to say nothing of the great good, morally and spiritually, they will do the human race."—W. A. Thompson, M. D.; Theodore F. Clark, M. D.; S. M. McCubbin, M. D.; H. F. Mikel, A. B., M. D.

"If understood and lived by the race, will empty our insane asylums, hospitals and jails in time. Should be in every home in the civilized world."—John H. Powell, M. D., (ex-President Hospital Medical College,) Atlanta, Ga.

"The world's most revolutionary books. They mean a better race."—W. A. Swann, M. D., Professor of Anatomy, Eclectic Medical University, Kansas City, Mo.

"The sex idea of these books make them the world's three greatest books."—E. B. Ramsey, M. D.

Any of these books can be secured through any book dealer or by addressing the Author, Sidney C. Tapp, Ph. B., Kansas City, Mo.













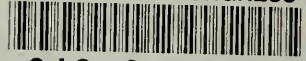








LIBRARY OF CONGRESS



0 019 971 843 5